

# The Shining Star Above The Heaven

## Chapter 901 - 901: The Possibilities

[ 1,486 words ]

"I agree with Emperor Rozwald, and in my opinion, we should spread more of our forces across the world to prepare for anything the devils have planned. With our forces spread across many regions, we will have many eyes overseeing these areas," said the brown-haired man. He is the king of the Valhemin Kingdom of the Orian continent, Frederick Van Ricondel.

"The thing that has worried me all this time is the disappearance of the interstellar vessels. It might actually be one of the devils' strategies. They might be planning to make it look like this world is already deserted and make us let our guards down before surprising us."

"Do you mean that those vessels are actually only a feint by the devils? And that the true intent of the devils is to launch a surprise attack while we think they are already gone?" one of the leaders from the Beast Continent asked. He is from the Black-Tailed Eagle Tribe.

King Frederick nodded. "Yes. The most obvious thing to me is the capacity of the interstellar vessels themselves. We know that the number of devils in this world has reached the billions. Even if the devils used all of the available vessels in this world, it would be impossible to fit those numbers."

Understanding dawned on some of the people as they facepalmed. How could they not have thought of that?

"But if that is the case, where are the devils hiding? We already checked every surface of this world, but there seems to be no sign of their presence. Even if they hide underground, they would still be detected by at least one of us. But the fact that we have not detected them at all makes us believe that they really escaped to space," the eagle commented.

"No, we have not checked all areas of the world yet. The dangerous regions are still not checked entirely because of how dangerous those places are. We are not too sure about those areas, but we cannot dismiss the possibility that the devils might be hiding there," King Frederick replied.

"Without being certain about the devils' position, we still have to keep our surveillance, even if there is nothing to look for," he added.

Aldrian, who heard it, nodded inwardly and agreed with King Frederick. Although he had already checked some of those places personally and did not find anything, there are others he has not checked yet. Those places still hold the possibility that the devils could be hiding while waiting for a good time to strike.

After a few moments of discussion, Aldrian finally opened his lips.

"I hear all of your suggestions, and I also agree with some of them. But for now, the suggestion from King Frederick seems more feasible and the best for now."

Hearing that, King Frederick smiled with pride while some of the leaders near him slightly snorted at him.

"However, make sure each group that spreads across the world has at least one pseudo-immortal stage or a peak pseudo-immortal establishment. If the devils indeed have a surprise for us, I don't want our troops to be overpowered," he said.

The others nodded.

"Now, you can start creating the groups that we will dispatch across the world. They will build outposts and camp in all regions of the world. They will report to all of you at certain intervals to make sure they stay in contact. If there is a group that does not report, then someone will have to check on that group," Aldrian added.

Not long after that, the meeting finished, and the leaders dispersed and returned to their own forces to carry out what had been planned.

Aldrian also stepped out and walked toward his tent with Baek Jimin and Angelica following behind him.

"I truly wonder where those devils went," Baek Jimin said, then turned to look at Aldrian with a smile.

"What do you think, dear? After two weeks here, you must have your own opinion about what the devils might be planning."

Aldrian also smiled. "Well, I have my guess, but it is still not confirmed, and I still need time to confirm it. For now, I will keep it a secret."

Hearing that, Baek Jimin pouted. "Don't you want to tell me what your guess is? I'm truly curious."

"No," he answered teasingly, which made Baek Jimin suddenly wrap her arm around Angelica's.

"Let's go somewhere else, Angelica. We will go somewhere that doesn't disturb mister secret, and we can do something more interesting," she said as she pulled Angelica away. She knew from Aldrian's gesture that he wanted to do something.

"But—" Angelica tried to say something as Baek Jimin dragged her, but Baek Jimin kept pulling her away and didn't give her any chance to protest. Angelica still seemed to want to follow Aldrian, glancing back at him several times, but Baek Jimin continued dragging her until both of their figures disappeared from Aldrian's sight.

He could only sigh at Baek Jimin's behavior and continued walking toward his tent.

After arriving at his tent, his body instantly disappeared and reappeared in the darkness. He had actually appeared deep underground, where he could continue his journey toward the world's faith gathering place.

Since a week ago, he had already started his journey toward that place after becoming confident that he could sense the clear direction of the world's faith energy. His speed in detecting the direction of the world's faith energy had become much faster after his experience with the Green Haven's faith energy.

His priority at this moment was to make this entire world his domain. With the world as his domain, he would know everything and would be able to decide whether his guess regarding the devils was true or not.

He agreed with what King Frederick said in the meeting, that the devils might be hiding somewhere in this world, in places they had not yet checked or were unable to check. There were several such places in this world, and all of them were dangerous regions filled with poison or volcanic activity.

But for him, there was another possibility besides those dangerous regions. A place no one else would expect. And that place was in the deep subterranean layers where even the spiritual sense of a peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivator could not reach.

Deep down underground, where any cultivator would assume no devils could possibly hide.

Why did he think the devils might be hiding deep underground? It was because of his experience in the Green Haven world. After he made the entire Green Haven his domain, he sensed a few devils hiding deep underground, outside the range of even peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators.

They had a secret space large enough for them to move freely underground and even stay there. From the looks of it, all of those devils were earth-element cultivators who could dig that deep and create a special space for themselves.

Now, if something like that also happened here, and if the devils were really planning something big, then the scale of the space should be much larger. Large enough to store billions of devils across the world.

However, in his opinion, the devils were most likely not gathered in one place. That would be ineffective and time-consuming. The devils were most likely spread across many subterranean regions of Aberon, hiding in different large groups. By spreading across the world, they also reduced the risk of being trapped in a single location if something happened to them.

By spreading out, they also gained a wider range for a potential surprise attack if they decided to strike the alliance forces. The alliance would never realize that something deep beneath them was a threat capable of throwing everything into chaos.

But even if his guess at this moment was true and the devils were hiding deep underground, it would be truly difficult to locate their exact positions. That was because of the vastness of the subterranean world, and the devils could hide at different depths.

It would be extremely time-consuming just to search for their locations, and that still did not include the challenge of battling them deep underground for the alliance forces.

With all the risks and difficulties involved in this matter, that was why he chose the easiest way to solve it. What else but making this entire world his domain? With the whole world as his domain, he could kill all of those devils easily.

Aldrian kept descending at high speed, hoping he would be lucky enough to reach the faith gathering place as quickly as possible.

-----

Somewhere in an unknown place, two figures sat facing each other as they played chess inside a simple room. The room was also quite spacious and a large illumination crystal lit the entire space. From the look of its walls, it was clear they were hardened soil. It was as if the room itself was located underground.

There was no sound for a moment until one of the figures moved his pawn and opened his lips.

"It looks like those bastards are still looking for our presence."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 902 - 902: A Shock on Both Sides

[ 1,596 words ]

The figure who spoke was a young-looking man with short black hair. A small part of his aura leaked out, showing that he had middle pseudo immortal stage cultivation, and he was a devil cultivator.

"Did you just go out to the surface again? I told you, you don't have to do that. If they find out about you, then our plan might fail and we are pretty much screwed without gaining anything." The figure across from him spoke with a frown on his face. This one was a middle-aged man with short brown hair and peak pseudo immortal stage cultivation.

He was the leader of the devils in Aberon.

The leader then moved his knight forward. Seeing his opponent make a move, the black-haired man paused as if thinking, before he also spoke.

"Well, somebody has to check the surface to know what the enemies are doing. We don't know what they might be up to if we do not observe them. Blindly waiting for them to be caught off guard is not really good. I'm afraid that we will be the ones caught off guard if we just blindly wait for them to be caught off guard." He then moved his queen.

"Besides, did you forget who I am? With my disguise and concealment technique, even peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators will not realize that I'm a devil until it is too late. I could sneak into their base without any problem and get out of it intact."

The leader stayed focused on the chessboard and took a deep breath.

"Well, that's true, but this is a really tense time when a small mistake could cost our lives, so I just want to make sure that we minimize the chance for us to fail. If we are about to die, then we at least have to bring down those bastards with us."

Then they turned silent for a few moments as the leader moved a pawn.

"The only question that I have in mind at this moment is... will His Majesty spare our lives if we survive this war? With you deciding to report to His Majesty about the current situation, I can only imagine how enraged he will be," the black-haired man said.

"His Majesty would send many powerful cultivators who will take care of all those bastards, but on the other side we will be seen as incompetent," he added.

The leader took a deep breath and nodded. "Well, whatever it is, it is much better than being branded as traitors because we escaped without fighting and died a dreadful death. At least if we are seen as incompetent, we will be given a quick death."

After that, another silence followed. This kind of discussion had been accompanying these two devils, who were the highest command of the devils in Aberon, during their hiding time deep underground.

Just like what Aldrian suspected, most of the devils were actually hiding deep underground, and they were indeed planning something. Outside their room was a large underground tunnel network that formed a massive underground base. Millions of devils were doing their own activities here without the alliance forces knowing.

They were waiting for the right time to strike the surface, giving the alliance forces a surprise that would cost many of their lives.

-----

Eleven days later, Aldrian was still descending, and it looked like he had to take a longer journey compared to when he was in the Green Haven World. The fate gathering place was located on the western side of the world, which was farther from his starting position.

At this time, Aldrian finally sensed that he was already near that place, and a few minutes later, he arrived.

The place had the same scenery as the ones in the other worlds, with lava surrounding the island, but the terrain had a different shape. He did not waste much time observing his surroundings and quickly flew toward the Rock of the Beginning. The moment he stepped onto the island beside the boulder, he instantly created his domain.

After his domain formed and that refreshing feeling spread across his body, he took a deep breath and immediately spread his domain sense across the world. He kept his focus on looking for any devils in the world, mainly deep underground.

After more than fifteen minutes, he opened his eyes and smiled.

"As I thought, they really are hiding deep underground. But wow, I have to say these devils are really determined for them to build that big underground base network. It is like they built a new world under the surface with that many devils and the complexity of the base."

After thinking for a moment, he decided to let the alliance troops take care of these devils. He could kill them by himself, but it would take some time to eliminate all of them. Their numbers reached billions, and they were spread across the world at various depths, which would make it take much longer for him to eradicate them alone.

If he involved the entire alliance force, it would become much easier and lessen his workload. The alliance forces would also feel more at ease if they could kill those devils themselves. If he simply told them not to worry about the devils because he had already taken care of everything, some people might still have doubt in their hearts.

With them able to battle the devils themselves, they would believe that the devils were eradicated entirely with peace of mind because they faced them directly. Although they would still wonder how he did it, as usual, they would accept it once all of the fighting was over.

Now the only thing left was to plan the battle's formations. It would be a large-scale massacre in a single strike.

-----

Three days later, the alliance forces across the world were making different movements from their usual activities. The alliance forces gathered in several places across the world in large groups, each consisting of tens of thousands up to hundreds of thousands of troops. They had already assumed their battle formations and seemed ready for battle if any devils appeared.

Three days ago, Aldrian told all leaders of the alliance forces to prepare for battle. They had to gather the troops that were spread across many places and prepare for a normal large-scale battle. Some of the forces had to merge with others to strengthen their overall power.

The leaders did not fully understand why Aldrian gave that order.

Although Aldrian had already told them about the devils' hiding places, they still did not understand why they had to wait with large forces in various locations. Why not just attack the devils directly?

Although the devils hid deep underground, they believed they could pursue and battle them with their superior overall power. They would not lose even if they fought inside the devils' own turf.

But they still believed in Aldrian's method. He said he would bring the battle to the surface to make it easier for them to massacre the devils. Although they did not know how Aldrian would do it, they kept obeying him. If they were ordered to prepare for any appearance of the devils, then they would prepare themselves.

With waiting expressions, they stayed wary of any movement from the devils.

While the alliance forces were ready for battle, the devils across Aberon were also still waiting for the right time to strike the surface. They continued their usual activities underground.

In one of the underground bases, the black-haired devil met with the leader.

"I just came back from the surface, and I found something strange in those cultivators' movements," the black-haired devil said.

The leader frowned. "What is strange?"

"They gathered the forces that were spread across many places and formed many large battle groups on flat terrain. They are already prepared with their artifacts and battle formations. It's as if they are waiting for a battle to come to those places," the black-haired devil replied, which made the leader's frown deepen.

'What are they up to now?' he thought.

"Did they somehow find out all of our locations deep underground? But that is still strange, because with their numbers, it would be extremely difficult for them to pursue us this deep. Even though they have many earth-element cultivators, their troop numbers would hinder them from moving quickly toward us," the black-haired devil said.

"If they pursue us this deep, they will be at a great disadvantage and could be trapped, and we could fight with our overwhelming numbers," he added.

The leader kept frowning because what the black-haired devil said was true. He knew that those invaders must also understand this disadvantage even if they had discovered their location. So why were they assuming battle formations as if they were preparing for war? Were they really planning to pursue them deep underground?

But then, suddenly, while he was still pondering about the alliance forces, his surroundings changed.

Before he could understand anything, he was already in a different environment, and around him stood thousands of devils, including the black-haired one.

From their expressions, they appeared stunned and then shocked, just like him. How could they not be shocked when they realized they were already on the surface?

They then noticed a large group of troops not far from them, also showing astonished expressions.

Each group stared at the other with identical looks of shock, which would have been quite hilarious if anyone saw both sides at this moment.

The devils who saw the large group of troops felt a cold shiver, because that large force was actually their enemies from the Central Star Cluster!

"Attack!" the leaders of the alliance forces finally shouted after snapping out of their shock. They had already prepared for this moment.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 903 - 903: One Sided Slaughter

[ 1,716 words ]

The scene after the order to attack could only be described as one sided slaughter. Although the number of devils was much higher than the alliance troops, their overall strength was still lacking compared to the alliance force.

The number of cultivators at the pseudo immortal establishment stage and above was far greater in the alliance force. With their strength, they swept through the weak devils like ants. As for the stronger devils, they ended up being ganged upon by several cultivators at the same realm.

The devils, still in shock over how they appeared on the surface and even right in front of the alliance force, could only put up futile resistance or try to escape in every direction. However, they were pursued by the alliance force that had already formed their battle formations.

The devils in disarray became easy targets, and killing them required little effort. The devils who tried to resist were killed. The devils who showed their backs to escape were killed. The devils who tried to commit suicide were killed before they could even do so. All of their efforts were broken by the powerful alliance force.

"Uwagh!"

"Don't retreat! Create a battle for— Aggrh!"

"Escape! Escape! Don't face them directly! Escape!"

The voices of the slaughtered devils and their panic resounded across the battlefield. The battle between the cultivators in the sky was also one-sided, as the devils who tried to fight stood no chance against the number of powerful cultivators from the alliance. In some cases, the ratio reached three to one, with one devil facing three cultivators of the same realm.

All kinds of elements were thrown across the sky, and spatial rifts appeared here and there, with some even creating dangerous spatial storms. The scene was truly chaotic, like some twisted festival, with the alliance force constantly taking the lives of the devils. Bodies of devils dropped from the sky like dead flies, and their blood fell like rain.

Figures such as Emperor Rozwald, Queen Revania, King Frederick, and the other leaders of their forces were like reapers. There was no one who could stop them, and the devils' side only had three peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators, with their leader being one of them.

Two of them died not long after being ganged upon by several cultivators, leaving only the leader. He saw his second in command, the black-haired devil, stabbed in the chest by some cultivators, killing him shortly after.

He tried to escape, flying in the opposite direction as quickly as possible. The others who saw him try to flee wanted to pursue him, but they were stunned when the leader's figure suddenly disappeared.

They frowned and thought that he might have escaped, but understanding that man was also observing this battle erased their worries. After the leader disappeared, the others looked for new targets, as there were still many devils they needed to kill. There were millions in just this place, after all.

Battles like this were happening in many parts of the world. The devils, caught off guard by the sudden change in their surroundings, were easily slaughtered by the alliance force.

The strategy from Aldrian was quite simple. He ordered the alliance force to prepare for battle in huge groups to strengthen their power. That was because they had to kill a huge number of devils on the battlefield.

After they finished preparing, Aldrian would teleport millions of devils to the separated battlefields that had already been prepared, allowing the alliance force to wipe out the disarrayed devils. The devils, who never expected to be teleported from underground, would have no time to consolidate their ranks or form any battle formation.

Aldrian would keep teleporting them in the number of millions until all devils were eradicated from the world. If the alliance troops exhausted all of their energy, then he would make a move personally to finish the job.

As a leader, Aldrian was of course observing these battles, and at this moment he was high in the sky, looking down at the world.

However, he was not alone. Beside him was another figure, already in a sorry state with his dantian shattered. The figure was in Aldrian's grasp as Aldrian choked him. This figure was actually the leader of the devils of this world. The leader who tried to escape

was easily caught by Aldrian, and his dantian was destroyed with a powerful punch in that moment of shock.

Blood had already flowed from the leader's lips. His skin was extremely pale, and his face was getting much older.

Cough! Cough!

He coughed a few times and looked at Aldrian with pain but a fierce expression. There was only rage in his eyes, as if he wanted to shred Aldrian into pieces at this moment. But Aldrian did not care about his fierce look as he stared calmly into the devil's eyes.

"You will regret... this... His Majesty... Vampire King... will come for you... and your family... there will be no one who survives," the leader said with difficulty as he suffocated and endured the pain.

Hearing that, Aldrian did not change his expression.

"Is that so? I will wait for him. I already invited him myself by killing his son anyway, so you don't have to tell me that."

Hearing that, the leader's eyes widened in shock. This man killed the son of the Vampire King?! The only son he could think of was of course Rulleus. He was the only one from the royal family who had departed for the central star cluster to invade the Ancient Blue Gate World—an invasion the leader thought had simply failed, since the force from the central star cluster had instead invaded them.

But he never expected that Rulleus was dead. He had assumed the prince escaped somewhere, but this man in front of him said that he killed Rulleus?!

'He is a madman. Crazy!' he thought despite the pain.

Who was Rulleus? He was said to be the successor of the Vampire King, and the Vampire King had always given him special attention. The Vampire King, one of the four overlords, led large armies that spread across the southern side of the First Heaven.

What would happen if the son he treasured so much was dead?

Hell would break loose.

"You... are... fucking crazy— arghhh!" he shouted in pain as Aldrian looked through his memories for a moment. His body convulsed during the process, and after Aldrian finished, he used his fire laws to burn the leader's body. He burned it until nothing remained, as even the ashes were completely incinerated.

Aldrian kept his calm expression after killing the leader and continued to observe the battle across the world. What he found in the leader's mind was not much, only the real plan of the devils, which was more or less already known to him and the other leaders.

The plan of the devils was simply to wait for the right time to strike the alliance force. They planned to wait until the alliance lowered their guard before launching their attack. The leader of the devils made the world seem abandoned, with the interstellar vessels disappearing from the entire world.

In truth, most of those vessels were waiting in the nearby asteroid belt. They intended to attack from behind when the order came. With a surprise attack, they planned to throw the alliance force into panic and chaos. Their vessels would destroy the alliance's vessels, cutting their transportation lines, and then support the ground troops.

Even if they had to wait a long time, they did not care, as they had already prepared for it.

The leader also sent a vessel toward the central region of heaven to report the situation in the fallen star cluster to the Vampire King. They needed to inform him that the fallen star cluster would likely fall, so he could send armies to help defend it.

If needed, the devils in this world would only come out once the armies from the central region of heaven arrived.

That was their entire plan, which unfortunately failed because Aldrian already knew about his tricks. As long as the world had become his domain, there was no way the devils could hide from him.

Aldrian suddenly smiled to himself as he thought about the reinforcements of the devils from the central region of heaven. To reach the central star cluster, they needed a two-year journey, which meant he had time to prepare for their arrival.

'Well, if there is anything that even needs to be prepared,' he thought.

He knew that with him killing the Vampire King's son, the devils who would come later would be on a completely different scale compared to any troops he had faced until now. He knew the Vampire King commanded numerous strong devils.

With him killing Rulleus, even the Vampire King himself might visit personally. Just thinking about the future, when he would see the Vampire King and all of those devils, Aldrian couldn't help but feel something rise inside him.

'Am I feeling excited?' he thought with a smile, which made him shake his head. If anyone knew his feelings at this moment, that facing the Vampire King and his armies made him excited, they would think he had already gone crazy.

There was no one who would feel excited to face a large and powerful army led by the Vampire King himself.

But for Aldrian, he saw this as his chance. A chance to test his power that had become too powerful. He had already reached the middle pseudo immortal establishment stage and had made a few worlds his domain. There was no one who could withstand his power, and he wanted to test it against the Vampire King himself and his mighty army.

This was also a chance for him to obliterate a large part of Tarius's influence in the First Heaven. If he could obliterate the Vampire King and his army, Tarius would lose many strong followers, which would weaken his influence and control over one side of the First Heaven. Tarius would also lose a large amount of faith energy, which would weaken him slightly.

Aldrian took a deep breath to calm his excitement. He needed to keep his arrogant side grounded. The superiority that stemmed from the strength of his past life was something he had to keep in check.

He returned his focus to the battle across the world. For now, he would take care of the ones in front of him first.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 904 - 904: The End of the War**

[ 1,549 words ]

The battle across the world continued, and whenever the alliance forces eradicated one batch of devil armies, Aldrian teleported another one in. He kept repeating that method until most of the alliance troops exhausted their energy and stamina.

Although some of the high-ranking cultivators at the immortal transition realm could still continue, Aldrian thought that it was enough for them. They had already killed more than a billion devils, and he could take care of the rest.

He told the alliance troops to take a rest and let him handle the remaining devils. The moment the alliance troops heard Aldrian's announcement, they did not waste any time and immediately rested. Some of the high-ranking cultivators still wanted to fight because they still had energy and stamina, but Aldrian also ordered them to stand down.

After making his troops rest, Aldrian finally began to take action. For the devils still hiding deep underground, he found a way to kill them more effectively.

Aldrian concentrated on several of the devils' bases, then controlled the soil above them. The devils inside suddenly heard a rumbling sound before the soil quickly pressed down. The bases collapsed on them, burying them under the weight of the planet's mantle. It happened so fast that almost none of the devils had time to shout or feel confused.

They were instantly crushed to death, buried deep inside the planet's mantle. There were some pseudo-immortal stage devils who managed to try holding back the collapsing earth for a few seconds.

However, their effort was futile. It was as if the soil was not affected by their earth laws. They simply could not control it. The planet's mantle kept pressing down on them until all of them were crushed beneath its weight.

No matter how strong they were, they died the moment their bodies were pressed by the weight of the thick layer of the planet's ground. It was the force of the world itself, something impossible to withstand even for peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators.

With Aldrian controlling the planet's mantle, he collapsed many devil bases in one go. He killed tens of millions with that method, yet he was not done. There were still many other bases spread across the world.

He kept controlling the planet's mantle until there were no devils left in Aberon. All of them were buried deep in the subterranean world, a place that might never be discovered unless someone dug deep into the planet's mantle.

Aldrian took a deep breath and looked toward the distant space. He looked toward the area only a few hours away by warp. From his position, he could see numerous rocks of various sizes floating and forming a sort of wall.

There were rocks the size of a continent among other smaller ones, which made this area the perfect place for hiding.

The area was an asteroid belt, the place where many of the devils' interstellar vessels were hiding, waiting an order to attack.

'Well, they can wait for now,' Aldrian thought.

For now, he believed it was enough. His troops needed to rest. Without receiving any command, those vessels would not move anyway, so he would let them keep waiting there, waiting for their doom.

His figure disappeared and reappeared on the surface where the groups of his empire's troops and the Orian continent's forces had gathered. There were still things to do even though the devils in this world had already been eradicated.

-----

Time passed quickly, and two months had already gone by. In that time, Aldrian had been quite busy eradicating the devils in other worlds as well. Since he was the only one who could sense all of the devils' locations by turning an entire world into his domain, he had to make those other worlds his domain too.

He had already informed the alliance forces in those worlds about the devils' plans, and it made them decide to wait for him to arrive and carry out exactly what he had planned.

Searching for billions of devils hidden deep within a planet's mantle would be difficult. They did not know the devils' positions, and the battle could turn ugly because the battlefield was deep underground.

Many alliance troops could lose their lives due to the unknown terrain and extreme environment, since they would be forced to fight deep beneath the surface.

This was also why the battles for the last three worlds lasted much longer than predicted and longer than any other wars they had experienced in the Fallen Star Cluster. Aldrian had to search for each world's faith gathering place, which could take weeks.

The battles themselves were much shorter, because the devils were gathered in several planned battlefields where the alliance troops were already waiting.

Aldrian was only able to eradicate the devils in the three worlds after two months. He and the alliance forces then moved on to target the devils hiding within the asteroid belt.

The battle in space, which also involved a game of cat and mouse among the numerous asteroids, lasted for five days before all the devils were killed and their interstellar vessels destroyed.

With the devils in the asteroid belt finally eliminated, the war in the Fallen Star Cluster could be considered over.

Therefore, at this time, which was already night, all of the alliance forces that had attacked the last three worlds gathered in Aberon. They gathered to celebrate the end of the war in the Fallen Star Cluster, a war that had lasted for almost four months. That duration was still within their expectations, and they were glad they had reached their target.

More than anything, they had achieved something their ancestors could not. They had taken back the Fallen Star Cluster.

The celebration for the end of the war was held on the vast land where millions of troops could gather together. Forces from different worlds in the central star cluster and from various races assembled here in an amicable atmosphere.

A grand feast and drinks had already been prepared on the many tables spread across the vast land, and all the troops looked toward the high platform that had been erected.

Aldrian stood on top of it with all the leaders of the forces from across the central star cluster. His gaze swept over all the troops below, and he could see their various expressions. Most of them were respect and reverence directed at him.

He lifted his clenched hand.

"We won!"

"UWOOOO!"

All the troops shouted in ecstasy, their voices shaking the space itself. Their roar echoed for kilometres, yet none of them cared if anyone could hear them. At this moment, there was no one else in this world. The devils were no more.

After the boisterous roar from the troops receded, Aldrian continued.

"We finally reached our objective here in the Fallen Star Cluster—No, from this moment, we will call it by its original ancient name, the Northern Star Cluster. This star cluster is no longer under the devils' occupation. We have liberated it!"

Hearing that, the troops returned to their boisterous shouting, but they quickly fell silent again, wanting to hear Aldrian continue.

"However, our achievement today came with a heavy price. Thousands of our comrades lost their lives, a loss that is truly regrettable to me."

Some of the troops's eyes watered, remembering their dead acquaintances. The memory still left them with sadness.

"I truly feel regret for the loss of lives, because I am the one who initiated this war. I am the one who invited all of you to participate, and I feel responsible for every death that occurred. For those who feel sadness because of your loss, I offer you my sincere apology." He slightly lowered his head.

The people who saw it widened their eyes, and some of them instantly shouted to Aldrian.

"Please don't lower your head, Your Majesty! We voluntarily came to this war, and we knew the consequences of it, so you don't have to feel bad for us! Please don't lower yourself before us!"

"Your Majesty, we achieved this glorious victory because of you, and we participated in this war with our own intent! You don't have to feel regret!"

"Your Majesty, you don't need to feel regret! I believe even the dead faced their end with pride because of the glorious moment before they met death. They participated in a war that will be written in history!"

"Your Majesty..."

Aldrian straightened his head and showed a slight smile toward the troops below. He heard all of their support, and he could not help but feel touched.

"I hear all of your support, and I'm truly thankful. To all of you, to everyone here who participated in this war, I have no words that can express my admiration for the bravery you have shown."

The people felt proud hearing that, their faces shining with pride. Aldrian then took a glass of wine from Baek Jimin beside him, followed by the troops, each holding their wooden tankards filled with wine. Seeing that all of them already held their drinks, Aldrian raised his glass into the air.

"For all of us, for the living and the dead, the heroes who will be written in history. The brave warriors who will live glorious lives. For the bright future!"

"For the bright future!" the others replied in unison, before all of them drank their wine in one go.

It was the drink that symbolized the start of the celebration. The celebration that marked the end of the war in the Northern Star Cluster.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 905 - 905: The News Spread**

[ 1,615 words ]

The war of the fallen star cluster had already ended, which made it to return to its old name, the northern star cluster.

However, the alliance forces still had to stay wary, in case devils were hiding in the vastness of the star cluster or in the worlds where Aldrian had not yet made them part of his domain. They would still need time to make sure there were no devils in those worlds.

As for the worlds that had already become Aldrian's domain, their rapid transformation made these worlds quickly become more habitable for anyone to stay.

Aldrian and the other forces discussed how to rebuild the worlds of the northern star cluster. They knew that if they simply left the worlds open without any regulations, chaos and war between cultivators could erupt.

Without regulation, anyone could stay and rebuild these worlds freely, and if problems arose between different individuals or powers, it would end in battle. These worlds were open for all to build, and everyone could contribute to their development.

What various parties of the central star cluster needed to do was ensure that the influx of people moving toward these worlds would not cause trouble. They needed to carry out their activities within the boundaries of the rules established by the alliance forces.

The alliance forces also discussed what they would gain from these worlds. In this case, these powers wanted to spread their own influence across these different worlds.

Aldrian knew that many powers wanted to extend their influence toward these worlds to strengthen their foundations, expand their territories, or fulfill whatever reasons they had for them.

They needed to discuss the partition to prevent conflict. Some powers wanted to build new branches of their families there, some imperial and royal families wanted to establish new vassals there, and other powers wanted similar treatment.

Of course, all of them had to receive Aldrian's agreement, and Aldrian also knew exactly what these people wanted. But for him, the ones he prioritized to have territory in these worlds were the people whose ancestors truly came from these worlds. They would be the first to receive territory.

They must have dreamed of returning to their ancestral lands, and Aldrian supported that. If Aldrian supported it, then who would dare oppose him?

So the discussion, which could even be called a negotiation, lasted for five days before all of them reached a unanimous agreement. That was quite fast for something as significant as the future of the ten worlds of the northern star cluster.

All of that was thanks to the respect they had for Aldrian, and once he decided something, they simply followed.

There was no fighting for territory and no angry shouting to show displeasure or disagreement, something that would normally happen in a discussion like this.

These people knew they could not act unbridled in front of Aldrian, and as the strongest cultivator and the one who made their victory possible, he had the greatest say.

After all of them reached an agreement, they finally could send the information to their home worlds, the information stating that they had already won the war, and that the name of the fallen star cluster was no more, replaced with the northern star cluster.

That was also a sign that they finally could go home.

-----

Two days after all of the alliance forces sent their victory information to their home worlds, the information finally reached those worlds. It had already been six months since the alliance force's departure, and there had been no news during all those months.

When various parties finally received the victory report, it caused an uproar, and they instantly spread it everywhere. This was great news that everyone had to know.

The news of the victory was pasted in many places, causing an uproar that made people across various worlds in the central star cluster start celebrating. The atmosphere became festive everywhere.

In plazas where people gathered, on roads where people passed by, from the largest cities to the smallest villages, the people began spreading it everywhere. Information agencies spread the news as well, sending out flyers even to the most remote places so everyone would know the good news.

Most of the headlines were written in big fonts with themes of victory. Phrases such as "We are taking back the fallen star cluster!" "Fallen star cluster is no more, it is the northern star cluster!" "The long-lasting threat finally eradicated!" "Victory in the North!" "A victory that will be written in history!" were easy for anyone to read.

All of the headlines clearly showed the news of victory, but the contents followed the same pattern. They praised not only the alliance forces but lifted Aldrian's name to the heavens. He had truly brought a miracle and achieved something that many ancestors in the past had failed to accomplish.

They could liberate the entire northern star cluster from the devils' occupation. The threat from the north finally disappeared once the devils lost their foundation in the

northern star cluster. They knew all of this could happen in the first place because of Aldrian.

The name Aldrian the Great echoed among many people once again and became the hot topic for the umpteenth time. Praise for him could be heard everywhere, adding to the stories of his legend.

It showed them once again that the title Aldrian the Great was not only for display or to show his status. It was a title earned through his incredible power and his ability to achieve what others could not. He was an extraordinary figure, a living legend who could bring hope to many people.

In the Ancient Blue Gate World, the atmosphere was extremely boisterous. They were truly proud of everyone from their world who joined the war that would be written in golden letters in history.

Moreover, Aldrian also came from their world. They could not help but think that Aldrian was their pride, the pride of their world.

A legend was born in their world, someone whose name spread not only throughout the central star cluster but far beyond.

In the continent of elves, specifically under the world tree where the Tree of Life was located, Sylphia sat in meditation facing the Tree of Life. Her face was serene, and her aura showed a cultivation level that would surprise Aldrian if he saw her now. At this moment, she had already reached middle duke stage, nearing high duke stage.

That meant she rose her cultivation from high marquess stage all the way to her current cultivation in just eight months. That was already incredibly fast, and she achieved it simply by cultivating in front of the Tree of Life while also eating its fruit.

The energy and the law comprehension she gained from the Tree of Life and its fruit greatly boosted her cultivation speed and her comprehension. She had even comprehended a new law at because of it.

While Sylphia cultivated, Sylvia played not far from her. She squatted and looked at a butterfly that had stopped on a flower petal. Sylvia smiled and tried to softly touch it, but it suddenly flew away, leaving her stunned before she happily tried to catch it.

But she stopped moving when she saw somebody approaching them. She saw Empress Vilena walking toward her with a beautiful smile.

Because she was already used to the empress's presence, Sylvia also showed her smile before continuing to pursue the butterfly. Empress Vilena could only shake her head at the spirit child's behavior before looking at Sylphia.

Sylphia, sensing the empress near her, slowly stopped her cultivation and opened her eyes. She turned her head and looked at Empress Vilena with a smile.

"Your majesty," Sylphia said in greeting.

Empress Vilena nodded with a smile. "My apologies if I disturbed your cultivation, but I brought good news that your majesty Sylphia must hear."

Sylphia looked confused. "What is it?"

"It is about the war in the fallen star cluster, the news about his majesty Aldrian." Hearing the empress's answer, Sylphia widened her eyes, and Sylvia instantly looked in the empress's direction.

"The war is over. His majesty has won." The empress continued, which made both Sylphia's and Sylvia's expressions turn ecstatic. Sylphia then joined her hands together.

"Thanks heavens, thanks heavenly tree of the world, he succeeded," she said.

"From the information, the alliance troops are on their way home at this moment," Empress Vilena added, which made Sylphia even happier. And for Sylvia?

"Yeay! Yeay! His majesty come back, his majesty come back!" Her happiness could not be contained as she jumped repeatedly. She already could not wait to see Aldrian again.

Sylphia looked at Sylvia and could not help but smile warmly at her. Sylvia had been waiting for so long, and finally the Tree of Life would be moved to a place much closer to her Aldrian.

As the people of the world celebrated, the ones who were the most proud were, of course, the people of the Aster Empire. When they heard about their emperor's victory, they truly celebrated in their own way.

Although the people of the Aster Empire did not fully understand the danger of the fallen star cluster because of their isolation in the past, they at least knew that the fallen star cluster had been a long-standing threat to the central star cluster.

Many of them had already learned about the fallen star cluster since their emperor announced he would invade it. For their emperor to put his attention on that place, it had to be dangerous.

However, they believed that Aldrian would succeed in the end. They had never seen their emperor fail, and they believed that he would return with victory once again.

Now their emperor had truly brought another glorious victory.

The news also quickly reached Aldrian's palace, where at this moment a woman with a bloated abdomen heard it from the Xin family's elder.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 906 - 906: The Approaching Danger?

[ 1,573 words ]

In one part of the peaceful and beautiful garden of Aldrian's palace, Irene was with Aldrey, and both sat on one of the long chairs. They were in the middle of enjoying the scenery of the garden when one of the Xin family's elders came to convey the news. Eleine also stood not far from them as she observed and guarded Irene.

Irene's pregnancy, which had already entered the third trimester, made her abdomen noticeably bloated, and she paid special attention to her condition. Aldrey also spent most of his time accompanying her in recent days.

After they heard that Aldrian had achieved victory and was on his way home, they showed ecstatic expressions, and Irene let out a relieved sigh. Her eyes even watered slightly as she felt glad that Aldrian had succeeded and she could finally put down her worry.

Even though she was confident in her son's strength, as a mother she still felt worried. Moreover, with her pregnancy, her emotions were easily swayed, which made her feel excessive emotions.

Aldrey, who had much confidence in his son, showed a proud expression. Although he also worried about Aldrian, he firmly believed that his son would succeed and return home safely. He smiled as he looked at his wife beside him, who was almost crying in relief, and gently stroked her back.

"See? I told you he would be okay and would come back nicely," Aldrey said to calm her emotions. Irene nodded, stroking her big belly as she smiled warmly with her still-watery eyes.

"Your big brother is coming back home," she said softly.

Aldrey also smiled warmly and touched her belly. "I wonder if he will arrive before this little angel is born into the world."

Eleine, still touched by the news of Aldrian's success, looked at her masters. Both of them were truly a loving family, and seeing them like this made her remember their past that had been full of struggle, even just to meet each other. Now they could live together as a loving husband and wife, with an incredible son, and soon another child would be born.

She was truly glad that she could witness all of this. She was truly glad that Aldrian had appeared in their lives and made it all possible.

While the three members of Aldrian's family stayed together on one side of the palace, there were others in the palace's grounds who also heard the news. The spirit ancestor, her retainer, and her guardian received the same message from one of their tribe members, and they couldn't help smiling.

"Thank heavens, there was no problem with the war," the spirit ancestor's retainer said in relief.

The spirit ancestor nodded and took a deep breath. "His Majesty's name, at this moment, will spread even farther across the first heaven. This is a historic war that shows we can defeat the devils even if they have already occupied a star cluster. Countless beings will hear his name, and whether they like it or not, they will hear it," the spirit ancestor said.

"However, things will become more chaotic in the future as His Majesty grows more famous." The spirit ancestor then looked toward the sky. "There will be more challenges coming to him."

Her retainer and guardian only nodded in agreement with the old spirit. They knew that the spirit ancestor understood more about Aldrian than they did. Her ability was much stronger and more profound, which made them believe in everything she said.

-----

While the worlds across the central star cluster celebrated and even prepared to welcome the alliance troops coming home, far away from their star cluster, unknown to any beings from the central star cluster, a massive armada of interstellar vessels was making its way toward their direction.

The scale of this armada was unlike anything before, with the number of vessels reaching hundreds of thousands!

Such an armada could easily bring hundreds of billions, or even a trillion, troops, something that would make many star clusters tremble before its might.

At the forefront of the armada was the largest vessel, and inside it, in a dark and vast cabin, a man sat in silence. He sat on his throne, and the gloomy atmosphere

surrounding him, along with the darkness enveloping his figure, made anyone too afraid to approach. This was without even mentioning his terrifying aura, which felt as though it wanted to break the barrier of the mortal realm.

He was the most feared figure among the devils in the southern side of the first heaven—the vampire king, Virusius van Reinfer.

He closed his eyes as he leaned his head on his hand, appearing lazy at this moment. However, deep in his heart, he held a burning rage unlike anything he had ever felt before. He wanted nothing more than to unleash his wrath, yet he had still not encountered the target of that wrath.

He couldn't erase the teasing and mocking expression on Aldrian's face when the man spoke to him, the vampire king. Every day he remembered that face, and it filled him with a humiliation he had never experienced. After killing his son, Aldrian had shown no fear. Instead, he had mocked him, one of the four overlords.

He truly could not wait to arrive and tear that face to pieces. He would also find that man's family and kill them just as his own son had been killed. He wanted Aldrian to watch as he shredded his family to pieces!

He gritted his teeth, and his aura flared slightly as he tried to keep his rage in check.

Crack!

Suddenly, the doors leading into the cabin opened, creating a cracking sound that echoed through the vast room. A vampire entered, and after a few moments, he arrived before the vampire king and went down on one knee.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, for disturbing your time, but there is information that came from the Divine Tower," he said.

The vampire king slowly opened his eyes. His red eyes shone in the dim cabin, adding to his intimidating presence.

"What is it?" he asked.

"The Divine Tower reported that they received a vision of the entire northern star cluster of the southern region being engulfed in flames. A sign of destruction and collapse. They interpreted it as the northern star cluster being under attack from an outside force and losing. They even said that perhaps, at this moment, the northern star cluster may have already fallen into the enemy's hands," the man said.

The vampire king frowned and couldn't help clenching his teeth in irritation. The Divine Tower was a special division under him that specialized in clairvoyance using their

unique technique. It was one of the most important divisions under his command, as they were truly useful for predicting or looking into anything he wished to know.

"Fucking useless. For them to lose an entire star cluster... if there are any survivors, I will kill them myself." The vampire king spoke fiercely. He was already enraged over his son's death, and now he received another humiliating piece of news. He wanted to kill anyone at this moment.

"Do they know who the enemies are that attacked the northern star cluster?" he asked.

"The Divine Tower said that some of their visions were obstructed by something, but they managed to gain a few clues. They believe the invaders came from the central star cluster," the man answered.

The vampire king's fury intensified.

The central star cluster? They attacked the northern star cluster? After all this time, they actually dared to attack his territory?

His rage grew even more overwhelming, but then his thoughts began to sharpen.

'Does this also have something to do with that man?'

He knew that even with his son dead or his armies defeated, those cultivators from the central star cluster should not have been capable of invading the northern star cluster. They were not united enough to accomplish something like that, and none of them would willingly throw away their resources for a large-scale war when they did not even know the outcome.

Unless there was someone who could unite them and force them to join the war, they could forget about attacking the northern star cluster. He couldn't help but once again remember Aldrian's face, which only made his anger rise even more.

Strange things had happened recently, and he did not know why, but his mind kept pointing toward that man.

First, their god's avatar canceled his descent, which confused him. There was no news from the apostle. Not long after, his son was killed by this unknown man who did not even fear him.

When he asked the Divine Tower to look into the identity of his son's killer, the divination ended with several of the diviners dead and others driven insane with their souls damaged.

They screamed wildly, shouting things like pleading for mercy or words such as "cannot comprehend," "a god," "too bright," which he could not understand.

It infuriated him, but also confused him, because this was the first time he had ever seen the diviners end up like that after being asked to look into something.

Although he wondered about the identity of that man, his fury and humiliation were far greater, which pushed him to continue mobilizing a large army to attack the central star cluster.

He knew that his son had been attacking that star cluster, so that star cluster was his first target. If his son died there, then he would bury the entire star cluster with him.

His eyes glistened dangerously.

'Whatever the case, that man will die, and I will give him the most horrible death.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 907 - 907: Festive Welcome

[ 1,523 words ]

Twenty four days later, in the space not far from the Ancient Blue Gate World, an interstellar vessel suddenly appeared from a wormhole. Then another vessel appeared, and more followed until hundreds of them emerged.

Aldrian, inside the foremost vessel, looked at the scene on the screen with a smile. He could see the Ancient Blue Gate World in the distance along with other worlds. He had finally arrived home after more than seven months spent outside the central star cluster.

If he counted the time difference, then he had been gone for nine months from the perspective of the people of the Ancient Blue Gate World. Although for cultivators, months were like a drop of water in their lifespan and felt short, he still felt he had been away for a long time.

He couldn't wait to go home. Moreover, his mother might be close to giving birth or might have already given birth to his little sibling. He wanted to see his little sibling, which made him want to return as soon as possible.

He could have teleported using his domain ability even from the northern star cluster, but it would be inappropriate to leave all of his comrades behind and go home alone.

He also could have teleported the entire armada, but that would cause chaos. The ability to teleport an entire armada of hundreds of interstellar vessels from the northern star cluster to the central star cluster?

There would be many disturbances if he showed them he could do that. The ability to instantly move many people to a different star cluster was a serious matter because such an ability was terrifying.

For many people, this ability was far more useful and practical in their daily lives compared to having powerful strength.

Who wouldn't want the ability to move to another place instantly, even across the distance between star clusters?

Many would start questioning him in their hearts, things like, "So you could do that? Why didn't you teleport us directly to our destination much earlier?"

"If you could do that, then why did we have to travel so tiredly using vessels?" And so on.

There would also be people who might want his help in the future, asking him to teleport them directly to other places. Some might even try to offer cooperation because they would want to research his ability, hoping to create something like a teleportation gate, which was still unknown to most people.

There were many other troublesome matters that could appear because of this.

His conclusion was that it was not good to reveal his long-distance teleportation capability. This was connected to his domain after all, something he kept as a personal secret. Even his women did not know about the domain.

So it was better to simply use normal transportation to return home.

As he continued watching the Ancient Blue Gate World, an incoming communication appeared and many screens opened in the control room. The screens showed various leaders of factions from different worlds of the central star cluster.

"Your majesty, we will part for now. I hope that I can invite your majesty to drink in the future," an old man said to Aldrian. He was the Sword Maiden's master.

"Your majesty, we will also part for now. I hope that I can visit your majesty soon," another leader said.

The other leaders also gave their farewell messages before Aldrian nodded. "I hear all of you, and I say again, thank you for your hard work and sacrifice. You may return to your own worlds."

A moment later, the interstellar vessels from worlds other than the Ancient Blue Gate World moved in different directions. They were heading back to their own home worlds. The vessels from the Ancient Blue Gate World continued traveling together toward their world.

After a while, they finally entered the Ancient Blue Gate World's atmosphere. All of the leaders from the Ancient Blue Gate World then said their goodbyes to Aldrian.

Aldrian returned their goodbyes before all of them spread out in different directions, returning to their own territories.

Aldrian's interstellar vessel drew closer to the Barisan Continent, and after a few moments it entered the clouds. Once the layer of clouds passed, he could finally see the continent more clearly.

After a few minutes, the interstellar vessel touched the ground in its designated landing space near the core region of the Eternal Sanctuary Forest. The landing space was also close to a large city, which made it accessible to common people.

That was why, at this moment, many people had gathered around the landing zone, forming a sea of people extending all the way toward the city. The moment they saw the approaching interstellar vessel, the atmosphere had already turned boisterous. Shouts filled with praise for Aldrian and all the troops resounded across the area.

As the hatch on the side of the hull opened, Aldrian was already standing with Angelica and Baek Jimin behind him. Xin Haotian was not far from him, followed by all the leaders of the major territories along with their troops.

"Welcome back, your majesty!"

"Welcome back! Congratulations!"

"All hail to your majesty! Your majesty is the strongest!"

Many people instantly shouted with full spirit the moment they saw Aldrian's figure. Aldrian showed a smile and finally walked down to step out of the vessel. Followed by the others, they formed a victory parade for the people to see as they made their way toward the city.

The parade had already been planned by the leaders of the major territories before they even departed for war. That was why the parade route had been prepared long before the troops returned.

Once the news of victory reached the Barisan Continent, the officials began their preparations. And when news of the vessels' approach arrived, they cleared the roads.

The scene of the parade could also be seen across the continent, as officials from all territories had prepared screens for the people to watch. This was a celebration worthy of everyone's attention.

Flower petals were thrown into the air as a sign of welcome and joy, adorning the parade.

The people also shouted praises for the rest of the troops, looking at them with deep admiration. These were the people who had experienced outer space while many on their continent still had not. They were the people of the Aster Empire, and that made the crowds proud.

They had not been open to the world for long, yet they had already experienced a war in another star cluster far away. The ones who joined the war felt truly proud at this moment, but they still kept their formation neat in the parade.

As for Aldrian, Baek Jimin, and Angelica, they waved their hands toward the people, making the crowd even more hysterical.

The parade continued until they reached the vast plaza where the city's teleportation station was located. The plaza had already been cleared of all activities for this moment, giving enough space for the troops.

After the entire force gathered in front of the teleportation portals, Aldrian faced the leaders of the major territories and all of his troops. He felt proud of them, and fortunately, there had been no casualties from his empire. He was glad that he could bring them all back home after the tiring months of battles.

"To all of you, the brave warriors, I truly thank you for your hard work. Now you may rest. For the leaders of the major territories, I want you to reward all of the troops under you. If you lack treasures, then come to me and I will add your treasures," Aldrian said.

The troops who heard it became even more ecstatic. When they went to war, they had not expected anything except the chance to follow their emperor and achieve victory. They joined the battle for the glory of their empire and their emperor, to raise his banner as high as possible and spread his name even farther.

However, if there was another benefit from joining the war, they would certainly not refuse it.

"Yes, your majesty!" all the leaders replied in unison. Of course, they all had enough treasures to reward the troops under them. There was no way they would ask Aldrian for treasures, as it would make them lose face in front of him.

Aldrian nodded. "Good. Now you may disperse. Enjoy your rest," he said before walking toward one of the teleportation portals followed by Baek Jimin, Angelica and Xin Haotian.

The portal had already been set to lead toward the portal near the Xin Family's secret realm, from where he could continue teleporting to his palace.

On his way to his palace, many cultivators from the Xin Family were already waiting for him, shouting praises in his direction. Even Patriarch Xin welcomed him personally.

After he conversed with Patriarch Xin for a short moment, he continued his way to the palace, and it did not take long before he finally stepped onto the floating land.

The moment his figure appeared on the teleportation formation on the palace grounds, his gaze was instantly drawn to a few figures already waiting for him. He saw his parents smiling, though he could see that his mother seemed close to tears.

However, his gaze soon shifted slightly downward toward his mother's abdomen, where he could see her bloated stomach.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 908 - 908: Growing Brotherly Feeling

[ 1,509 words ]

There were his parents, Eleine, and not far from them, there were the spirit ancestors and her two companions, all waiting for him, but Aldrian's eyes focused on his mother's bloated stomach. The gestation period of cultivators was much longer compared to normal mortals without cultivation.

That was because the child needed more time to develop, and they also absorbed the mother's energy to support their growth. That was why cultivators in their pregnancy period needed more nutrition or an energy source to support their child as well.

Aldrian's heart trembled as he looked at his mother's stomach, but he quickly calmed himself and walked toward his parents. They had been waiting for him and must have been worried, so he had to greet them first.

"Father, Mother, I'm back," he said warmly, which made Irene quickly grab his hand.

"I'm glad that you came safely, son," she said with watery eyes, then looked over his body. "Are you hurt anywhere? I hope you didn't get hurt."

Aldrian kept his warm smile. "No, Mother, I'm not injured at all. Look, I'm as healthy as ever. How could I be injured when I'm too strong?" he said while raising one of his hands to show his muscle.

Irene smiled as she wiped her eyes.

"I'm glad you could come back safely," Aldrey finally said, which made Aldrian look toward his father.

"Of course, Father. Well, I have to come home safely because..." Aldrian then looked toward his mother's bloated stomach. "There is my little sibling waiting for me. How could I not come back?"

He touched his mother's bloated stomach softly and sensed the baby's condition.

'It's a girl, and she is really healthy,' he thought as his smile grew warmer. From the age of the pregnancy and the signs in his mother's body, it seemed her due date was near.

He could sense everything about his little sister. Her heartbeat, her movements that were quite active, her face and body shape, her condition, all of it was clear to his senses.

A new kind of feeling welled inside him. Even while his little sister was still inside his mother's stomach, his instinct as an older brother had already begun to emerge.

Aldrey and Irene smiled when they heard Aldrian and saw his attention toward his little sibling. They would soon have an incoming angel, their first daughter, and her presence would add a beautiful color to their small family. They wanted to see how Aldrian would act as a big brother. With how affectionate he was toward his family, they could only imagine how he would pamper his little sister in the future.

"Elder Lina said that your mother will be due within a week at most," Aldrey said.

Aldrian nodded in understanding. "I see. I'm glad that I could come back before the due date so I can accompany Mother and my little sister personally."

Aldrian smiled as he continued looking at his mother's stomach. He then looked at Eleine, who was standing not far behind his parents.

"Eleine," he said warmly.

Eleine showed her smile as she responded to Aldrian.

"Young master, I'm glad that you are safe."

Aldrian nodded, then turned to the spirit ancestor and her two companions.

"Elder, how is your stay all this time? Is there anything that made you uncomfortable?" he said in greeting, which the spirit ancestor responded to with a smile and a nod.

"You jest, Your Majesty. There is no way I would feel uncomfortable in this kind of place. I even feel that I don't want to leave," she said jokingly.

"I'm glad to hear that," Aldrian answered.

"Your Majesty, the devils' problem in the Northern Star Cluster is already entirely solved, I suppose?" the spirit ancestor asked.

Aldrian nodded. "Well, yes, although we are still not entirely sure if any devils are hiding somewhere. But the entire Northern Star Cluster has already been liberated from the devils' occupation. For now, even if there are still devils somewhere in the Northern Star Cluster, they can only hide."

The spirit ancestor nodded while her retainer and guardian looked at Aldrian with amazement. They still felt it surreal that a star cluster which had been a headache for all the powers of the Central Star Cluster could be taken care of just like that. This was the first time they had heard of the devils losing a territory as large as a star cluster.

The others also wondered what kind of things he had encountered in the Northern Star Cluster. What kind of experiences he had there. Whether the battle had been difficult. There were many questions they wanted to hear from his stories.

"Ah, yes. Mother, let me bring Sylphia back first, then we can talk about many things later," Aldrian said to his mother, who was still holding his hand.

Irene nodded with a smile. "Yes, it will be good for all of us to gather at this moment. You should bring her quickly."

Aldrian nodded before he suddenly disappeared. The others could only smile as they looked at the space where Aldrian had vanished, and afterward Irene looked at Baek Jimin and Angelica.

"Oh dear, all of you must be tired. Come, come, let's go. We can talk about many things while you take a seat in the garden and wait for Aldrian to come back," she said as she grabbed both of their hands.

Baek Jimin and Angelica could only let themselves be pulled along by Irene toward one side of the garden, where they could talk about many things.

-----

Aldrian had already appeared in the sky above the capital city of the Verdyn Empire, and he could see the festivities of the people who had just welcomed Princess Vaeril and her troops. The roads were adorned with many decorations, just like the roads of his own empire at this moment.

As for the princess, she had already entered the palace and was walking toward the direction of the Tree of Life. Aldrian's domain sense swept toward the Tree of Life's location, and he smiled as he sensed Sylphia and Sylvia together. Sylphia seemed to be conversing with Empress Vilena. Viona was also with them, not far away, listening to their conversation.

Without waiting any longer, he teleported to the side of the Tree of Life. He did not make any effort to hide his presence, so the moment he appeared, everyone in the area sensed him instantly.

They all turned toward him, and their eyes widening in shock.

"Dear!" Sylphia said cheerfully, wanting to run toward him. However, someone else moved much faster than her, and her speed was far beyond Sylphia's.

Sylvia crashed her small body into Aldrian, and he had already prepared himself for this moment. He strengthened his body and covered it with his energy to withstand the impact, because if he had not, his body would have been thrown far away and heavily injured by Sylvia's momentum.

His body remained standing still as he received the force from Sylvia's momentum and her crushing hug that could have killed him.

"Your Majesty, Your Majesty!" she said happily while hugging his neck with hyperactive movements. She jumped up and down, up and down in the air, showing her extreme happiness.

Aldrian could only smile at the spirit child's power and behavior before he also hugged her tenderly.

"I'm back, Sylvia," he said to the spirit child before turning his head toward Sylphia.

Sylphia was already standing in front of him with a smile on her face. "Welcome back, dear," she said with deep affection.

Aldrian nodded, still smiling. "I'm back." He then looked toward Empress Vilena and Viona.

"Your Majesty, Viona," he greeted both of them.

Empress Vilena nodded with a smile. "Welcome back, Your Majesty, and congratulations on your victory."

"No, it's our victory. Without everyone's effort, we would not have achieved it this quickly. Without the sacrifices of many people, we would not have reached this point."

Empress Vilena understood that Aldrian simply wanted to appear humble, so she did not refute him.

"And I have to apologize, Your Majesty, because some of the elves lost their lives. If you want, I will give their families compensation," Aldrian said, which made Empress Vilena widen her eyes slightly before she instantly waved her hand.

"No, you don't have to do that, Your Majesty. Let me be the one to compensate them. That will be enough," she said hurriedly.

There was no way she would allow Aldrian to give compensation to the subjects of her own empire. She would lose face in front of him because it would be as if she did not pay attention to her subjects and instead relied on Aldrian to take care of them.

"Alright then," Aldrian said before he looked toward another figure entering the place.

Princess Vaeril had finally arrived, and the moment she saw Aldrian, she was stunned, but she quickly approached him.

"Your Majesty," she said in greeting with a slight bow. "It's surprising to see you here. I thought Your Majesty was in the Aster Empire?" she added with curiosity.

Aldrian nodded. "Well, yes. I actually just came from the Aster Empire, and I thought of bringing Sylphia back home with the Tree of Life," he said as he turned to look at the great Tree of Life.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **- Chapter 909 - 909: Picking Up**

### **Chapter 909 - 909: Picking Up**

[ 1,448 words ]

Hearing that Aldrian wanted to bring back Sylphia and the Tree of Life, the mother and daughter knew that the time had come for the Tree of Life to change its location after spending eons in their empire.

One of their sacred trees would be taken by a human, and after looking at the tree that had stayed in this place for such a long time, they couldn't help but feel a sadness in their hearts. After the tree was moved, the scenery of this place would obviously change. It would not be as flourishing as when the Tree of Life was here.

Still, they believed this was the best decision, and moreover, the spirit of the Tree of Life really liked Aldrian.

The spirit child could not erase Aldrian's figure from her mind, and she always asked about him.

With her character like that, it would only create trouble for them in the future if they tried to keep the Tree of Life here. Not only did the spirit of the Tree of Life have peak pseudo immortal stage cultivation, but she also seemed to contain a hidden great power that even made Viona feel a slight disturbance in her being.

It was as if the spirit child's existence carried something that could make spirits of trees like Viona feel reverence. When the Tree of Life first came to this empire, brought by the first ancestor, Viona had already been able to sense that it was special. She felt a sacred feeling and reverence toward it.

It was something that shocked Viona the first time she felt it. She did not know the full history of the Tree of Life, only that this tree was much older than even her real body. But the fact that she, the World Tree, could feel reverence toward the Tree of Life meant that the origin of the Tree of Life might be higher than the World Tree itself.

Higher than the tree that became a branch of the Heavenly Tree of the world.

"I see," Empress Vilena said with a slight sadness in her voice. Aldrian, who knew that the empress and the princess had lingering feelings toward the tree, spoke to them with a smile.

"Your Majesty and Princess Vaelir, you don't have to feel so sad about parting from Sylvia. You can come to my palace anytime to see her, so don't worry."

Empress Vilena released a small sigh. "I see... then I'm glad to hear that," she said, then looked at the Tree of Life.

"So how will Your Majesty move the Tree of Life? Although we have never moved the Tree of Life before, maybe we could try the normal way to move it toward Your Majesty's palace," she added.

What Empress Vilena had in mind was to move the Tree of Life into an interstellar vessel, which would be large enough to hold the tree and bring it to the Barisan Continent.

But the problem was that she did not know the true nature of the Tree of Life, which made her unsure whether it could be moved that way.

Aldrian smiled when he heard her question.

"No, Your Majesty, I have my own way to move the Tree of Life, so you don't have to worry about it," he said, and Empress Vilena nodded in response.

"If Your Majesty says so."

"Anyway, I think I will have to go for now. Thank you for taking care of Sylphia all this time, Your Majesty, and for the compensation of me taking Sylvia..."

Suddenly, not far from them, a mountain of treasures appeared.

Empress Vilena, Princess Vaeril, and Viona widened their eyes in shock. The mountain of treasures filled one part of the space beneath the World Tree, and the moment it appeared, its aura instantly spread across the vast space. If there were no special formation blocking the aura and energy from leaking out, the aura would have surged out and covered the entire palace.

There were hundreds of billions of peak-level energy stones, ten divine-grade artifacts, many pills that could help the elves' cultivation, elixirs with various effects, formation knowledge, and more. The quantity alone was enough to create another empire—one even stronger than the Verdyn Empire.

Their hearts shuddered. They had already accepted what kind of compensation they would receive from Aldrian, but seeing it appear right before their eyes still shook their souls. This amount of treasure could make their empire many times stronger.

The number of divine-grade artifacts alone was more than what the imperial family currently possessed, and they could sense that a few among them were on the same level as their legacy artifact at peak divine grade.

They did not know how rich Aldrian truly was, but for him to casually take out this much treasure... just how wealthy was he? Did he have an island full of treasures somewhere?

"I hope that all of these treasures can greatly benefit the imperial family and the Verdyn Empire as a whole. This is also a sign of the deepening friendship between our empires," Aldrian said with a smile.

"Ah... yes, Your Majesty," Empress Vilena said awkwardly, still in shock.

Aldrian could not help but find their reactions amusing. But it was not surprising to see such expressions when faced with mountains of treasure. For him, these treasures were still just a drop of water in his large bucket full of water.

Moreover, after he made several worlds in the Northern Star Cluster his domain, his treasures continued piling up. That was because he had finally discovered the location of the faith gathering place in those worlds built by his followers, which also contained many treasures.

Aldrian turned his gaze toward Sylvia in his arms, who was also looking at the mountain of treasure. Sensing his gaze, she looked up at him, which made him smile warmly.

"Let's go home," he said softly, and she responded with "Hm," smiling and nodding repeatedly.

Aldrian then focused his domain sense on the Tree of Life. He concentrated on moving it, and a moment later, the Tree of Life suddenly disappeared. The others were stunned by its sudden disappearance, but then they heard Aldrian's voice again.

"Then we will take our leave. Thank you once again, Your Majesty, Princess Vaeril, Viona."

He, Sylphia, and Sylvia disappeared, leaving the three figures still speechless. They looked at the spot where the Tree of Life had grown, which now held a large hole. The soil did not turn messy despite the tree's disappearance, and it only left many holes where the Tree of Life's roots had grown in the past.

After a few seconds of silence, the three figures released a sigh.

"Truly amazing. As expected of His Majesty Aldrian," Empress Vilena said.

Princess Vaelir nodded without saying anything, while Viona continued looking at the spot where the Tree of Life had once stood.

Empress Vilena sighed once more. "Let's go. We need to check this mountain of treasures. It will take us some time to count and appraise all of these treasures," she said, looking at the mountain of treasures.

-----

In the sky above Aldrian's palace, an unusual object appeared and anyone who saw it would think they had gone crazy. That was exactly what happened to some people near the core region of the Eternal Sanctuary Forest.

Several cultivators were traveling between the trees when they accidentally looked in the direction of Aldrian's palace. They stopped and rubbed their eyes, as if trying to make sure they were not hallucinating.

"Do you see what I see?" one of them asked as he stared at the sky.

"Of course. How could I not see it when that thing is so big?" another replied.

"Is that a fucking tree?"

What they saw was a giant tree floating in the sky, leaving them unsure of what to think.

While some people were confused, the Tree of Life, Aldrian, Sylphia, and Sylvia floated peacefully, enjoying the scenery below. Aldrian had teleported all of them high into the sky and kept them suspended so Sylvia could see a different view and the home where she would be staying.

Sylvia in his arms looked truly amazed, her eyes glistening as she saw this kind of scenery for the first time. Her body stayed still, as if she were quietly admiring the beauty beneath them.

Sylphia felt the same, holding onto Aldrian's arm while enjoying the view.

Aldrian smiled when he saw both of them enjoying the scenery, then looked at Sylvia.

"Do you like it, Sylvia?"

Sylvia smiled, turned her head toward him, and nodded repeatedly. "Sylvia like it."

Aldrian then pointed toward the grand palace below. "That is where you will stay with me. That is your new home."

Sylvia looked at the palace, smiled, and quickly hugged Aldrian.

"Yeay, with Your Majesty," she said happily.

Aldrian hugged her back and looked down again.

"Now let's look at your new home, Sylvia."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 910 - 910: Sylvia's New Home

[ 1,496 words ]

Aldrian then slowly landed toward one side of his palace's garden ground where he had already prepared a special spot for the Tree of Life. The spot was located in the wide field surrounded by many kinds of flowers that would add to the beauty once the Tree of Life was placed there.

As they continued approaching the land, they finally could clearly see the spot where a large hole had already been created. Aldrian looked at Sylvia with a smile.

"Sylvia, that will be where you stay now," he said while pointing at the big hole.

Sylvia's face grew even more ecstatic, and she just couldn't help but move her tree body as if she couldn't wait to be planted there.

After a few minutes, they finally landed on the ground, and Aldrian slowly placed the large tree in the hole. After he thought the position was right, he moved the large pail of soil to cover the tree's roots. Sylvia also began to move her roots as she spread them underground to stabilize her body and embed herself into the ground.

After a few moments, all was done, and finally the Tree of Life could be said to be safely settled there. Sylvia happily moved her body up and down in Aldrian's arms as she looked at her body finally settled in this place.

"You can look at your surroundings first, enjoy your new environment," Aldrian said while he loosened his hug, which allowed Sylvia to fly.

With a happy face she flew away and looked at her surroundings, observing all of it. There were many kinds of things that were not present when she was only under the World Tree. Here she could see the blue sky, the sun, many kinds of animals, and so on.

Although in the distant past her real body already had a similar place where the Tree of Life was planted, that had only been in her tree form. Her ability to understand something new and to move was very limited, which made her cognitive ability lacking compared to when the tree already had a spirit.

At this moment, her body flew around her real body, and her gaze moved here and there as if she wanted to study many things, but she was confused about what to start with.

Aldrian and Sylphia, who were looking at her behavior, smiled. They felt glad that Sylvia was happy with this new place, to the point that she seemed more curious about her surroundings than staying clinging to Aldrian.

Her spirit and true body, full of life laws, instantly showed their miracle as they attracted many animals and nourished the already fertile soil. Birds and insects started to come, flowers swayed as if they felt happy with the new presence nearby, and the soil that had just been used to bury the Tree of Life's roots also began to grow small plants.

All of it happened so fast that it amazed Sylphia.

Sylvia, who saw many birds coming to her, decided to play with them as they flew together. Aldrian and Sylphia kept observing Sylvia playing for a few minutes when a few figures approached them with astonished expressions, their gazes locked onto the big tree.

Aldrian turned to look at his parents, along with his women and Eleine, who were walking in his direction.

Sylvia, who sensed a few figures approaching him, suddenly dashed toward him and crashed into his back as she tried to hide from the newcomers. Seeing Sylvia like that, Aldrian could only give a small sigh and try to calm her.

"It's okay, Sylvia. They are my family, and they are yours too, so greet them."

Sylvia peeked from behind Aldrian's back toward the newcomers, then turned to see Aldrian's smiling face, which encouraged her to be a bit braver. He then picked Sylvia up from behind him and carried her in front to show her to his parents.

Finally, his family arrived and looked at Sylvia's cute face, which was also curiously observing them.

"Who is this adorable child?" Irene suddenly asked as she walked closer and slightly bent her body to look at Sylvia much closer, softly pinching her cheek.

Sylvia, understanding that the person in front of her did not show any ill intent, did not resist. Instead, she looked at Irene with a curious gaze while hugging Aldrian's neck.

"She is the spirit of this big tree, Sylvia, and the tree is called the Tree of Life. Sylvia is quite a shy spirit, so she is still not used to people she does not know, but as time passes she will open up to those close to her," Aldrian replied with a smile.

The others who heard it finally understood, but then Aldrey asked,

"Where did you get this tree from? I feel a refreshing sensation throughout my body even when I only look at it, and now that I am close to it, it feels as if my entire body is rejuvenated and even my thought process seems much clearer and calmer."

"I got this tree from Empress Vilena of the Verdyn Empire of the continent of elves. Well, let's say I bartered this tree with something else so I could bring it here," Aldrian replied.

His father nodded. Although he did not understand the exact reason Aldrian decided to bring the tree here, he believed it must be for a good purpose. He could sense how special the tree was, and perhaps Aldrian brought it here precisely because of how special it was.

He then looked again toward Sylvia, who by this moment was already braver as she curiously looked at Irene and the others, although she was still in Aldrian's arms. Aldrey couldn't help but imagine a future where Aldrian had his own children as he watched him holding Sylvia like that.

Aldrey smiled and also interacted with Sylvia. Baek Jimin and Angelica followed as they were also curious about Sylvia, and they conversed with Sylphia as well.

Not far from them, the Spirit Ancestor with her two companions also arrived and looked toward the tree. The Spirit Ancestor showed an astonished expression on her old face as she saw the Tree of Life.

"Isn't that the Tree of Life?" she asked.

Her retainer was shocked upon hearing that. "The Tree of Life? One of the sacred trees hidden beneath the Verdyn Empire capital's World Tree?"

"How could the elves give one of their sacred trees to someone else? This is unprecedented. And that child..." the guardian said, also in astonishment.

The Spirit Ancestor nodded solemnly. "That child is the spirit of the Tree of Life, and she seems close to His Majesty for her to cling to him like that. From the feeling I received, I am confident in assuming that this spirit child—no, more precisely, the Tree of Life—has a much more extraordinary origin than I thought, even more extraordinary than the origin of our race."

Hearing that, both of her companions were even more shocked.

Something greater than the origin of their own spirit race? Their spirit race was beloved by the heavens, and the heavens themselves granted them special privileges that other beings did not have.

If the Tree of Life, which was the source of the spirit child, had an even more special origin, then was she created directly by the heavens, or something else?

They continued to look at the Tree of Life and Aldrian's interaction with his family for a moment before they stepped away to give Aldrian and his family private time.

Aldrian and his family conversed under the Tree of Life, with him moving a long table and chairs from another place to set them beneath the tree. They spent a long time talking with one another, speaking about many things, mostly his experience in the Northern Star Cluster.

-----

While Aldrian and his family were still enjoying their time together, the news of the alliance force returning to their home worlds spread to the nearby star clusters and even beyond that. After hearing about it, many factions from those star clusters sent their envoys to visit the Central Star Cluster.

Of course, their specific purpose was to visit Aldrian, who was said to be the leader of the alliance force. They had already heard his name and how powerful he was, but not all powers had decided to visit him at first. Some still thought it was not in their interest to build communication with Aldrian.

Even when they heard about the intention of the alliance troops from the Central Star Cluster wanting to liberate the Northern Star Cluster, they still did not move much.

However, with the Northern Star Cluster liberated from the devils, all of those factions could no longer hold themselves back from wanting to meet Aldrian.

From the ones who had roots in the Northern Star Cluster to the ones who suddenly gained interest because of the situation there, all of them did not waste any time and decided to visit him.

They could not afford to lose to other factions in forming a connection with Aldrian and involving themselves in the matter of the Northern Star Cluster!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 911 - 911: The Birth of Little Angel**

[ 1,505 words ]

Two days later, Irene and Aldrey were inside their room after Irene took a walk in the garden. Aldrey held his wife's hand softly as he guided her toward the balcony, where

one of the Irene's favourite resting spot was. From there, she could see the clear sky and the distant scenery from the high ground.

In the third trimester of her pregnancy, she did not know why, but she liked to sit in that spot and look at the clear sky.

"Don't you want to stay inside? With your due date getting closer, the cold outside is not good for you," Aldrey said with worry.

Irene smiled. "Why are you so worried? There will be no problem, and I think our baby also likes..." But before she could finish her words, she suddenly felt something from her stomach. She frowned before her expression tightened in pain.

"Ah." She let out a soft moan as she touched her belly.

Seeing this, Aldrey widened his eyes and quickly steadied her so she would not collapse.

"Dear?!"

"Aldrey, it hurts... my stomach... I think our daughter is coming."

Aldrey did not waste any time and shouted, "Elder Lina! Irene will give birth!" His voice echoed through the vast space, and everyone in the palace grounds could hear it.

Not even three seconds after his shout, a figure suddenly appeared beside them.

Aldrian showed a worried expression, and it grew even heavier when he saw his mother's pained face.

"Mother." He wanted to ease her pain, but Irene stopped him with a slight smile, already knowing what her son intended to do.

"No, you don't have to do that," she said amidst the pain. "It's only your little sister wanting to get out. I can still endure this."

"But—" Aldrian wanted to refute her words, but Irene had already cut him off.

"This pain is caused by our new family, and I want to feel it, just like when you were about to be born into this world. It's okay."

Aldrian could feel the determination in his mother's pained expression. Was it because of her love for her child? A deep love strong enough for her to accept the pain of labor? Was this her way of showing her love—by embracing everything her child brought her, even the pain?

Aldrian could not help but feel touched, and he wanted to support her.

Bam!

"My lady," Elder Lina, the physician and wife of Elder Weijun, suddenly entered the room with three other women physicians.

They were the team prepared for Irene's labor, and all of them had stayed near her all this time, waiting for the due moment.

The physicians quickly helped Irene lie down on the bed nearby. They decided to use this bedroom as the place for her delivery.

Elder Lina then grabbed Aldrey's and Aldrian's hands and pulled them outside.

"I know Lord Aldrey will likely faint the moment he sees Lady Irene start to strain, just like when he almost fainted during young master Aldrian's birth. That's why you two should wait outside. Young master Aldrian, stay with your father and calm him," she said before pushing them out and quickly closing the door.

Aldrian stood stunned, while his father wore an anxious expression. Aldrian could not help but glance at him.

"You almost fainted when Mother gave birth to me?"

"Shut up! You don't understand!" his father said in embarrassment as his face turned red. Even so, he kept staring at the closed door with a worried expression. Aldrian did not tease him further and waited with him. He had just discovered another side of his father, who always seemed strong.

He found it amusing that his father, who never turned away from slaughter and bloodshed, would almost faint at the sight of his mother in labor. But he did not mock him. It only showed how deeply his father loved his mother, so much that he could not bear to see her in pain.

He couldn't help but suddenly imagine what would happen if he were like his father and ended up almost fainting the moment his own child was born.

He quickly shook his head to get rid of that image. He would stay strong for his women, for his dignity in the future!

He strengthened that resolve inside his heart.

From the hallway, a few figures rushed toward them. They were his women, Eleine, and from the other end of the hallway, the spirit ancestor and her two companions appeared.

"How is Mother-in-law?" Sylphia asked once they arrived.

"Elder Lina is already inside, and they just started the labor process," Aldrian answered.

The others looked at the room worriedly, while the spirit ancestor and her two companions also watched the door, anticipating the birth and the arrival of a new member of Aldrian's family. The spirit ancestor knew there would be no problem with the labor, as this family had already been blessed with Aldrian's presence.

No sound came from the room because of the soundproof formation, so all of them could only wait until Elder Lina or someone inside informed them that the labor had finished.

For the next few minutes, Aldrey walked back and forth in restless agitation. He took a deep breath several times to calm himself, but he still could not steady his nerves and continued to look anxious.

The others were not surprised by Aldrey's behavior. They understood his anxiety. As a husband who loved his wife, he expressed his worry this way.

After waiting for a few more minutes, the door of the room suddenly opened, prompting all of them to look in its direction. Elder Lina appeared from behind the door with a smile, which was the first good sign.

"It's done. Congratulations, Lord Aldrey. You may enter now," she said, making Aldrey rush inside the room. Elder Lina stepped aside to let him in, and the others also wanted to follow. Aldrian went in right after his father, as he also wanted to see his little sister quickly.

Once Aldrian entered, he turned to look at his mother. She had already changed into a clean robe. Her tired face and the sweat running down her beautiful features showed how much she had struggled during labor.

His father was showering her with affection, holding her hand and gently touching her face while also glancing at the small figure beside her with teary eyes.

Aldrian's gaze slowly shifted to the side of his mother, and he finally saw her clearly, the little being who made his brotherly feelings bloom. He stepped closer to get a better look at his little sister.

A cute baby with black hair, just like her mother, was wrapped in a white cloth to protect her tiny body. Her eyes were still closed, and she sometimes moved her head as if trying to adjust into a more comfortable position. Soft sounds like "ack, ack" escaped her lips as she shifted.

"How cute," Sylphia commented beside him while focusing on the baby and Aldrian nodded.

"I want to hold her," his father said as Aldrey looked at the newborn.

Elder Lina, who stood not far from him, approached the baby and slowly picked her up before carefully placing her into Aldrey's arms.

"Here you go," she said.

Aldrey moved very carefully, as if he were receiving the most fragile treasure in the world and feared dropping her. Once the baby was safely in his arms, Aldrey smiled at her.

"My daughter, you are so beautiful, just like your mother," he mumbled. He continued smiling for a few moments before turning his gaze to Aldrian.

"Come here," he said. Aldrian walked closer and stood beside his father to look at his little sister. He couldn't help but smile warmly and gently touch her cheek with the tip of his finger. He tapped her cheek a few times, which made her let out soft "ack, ack" sounds and move her head as if responding to his touch.

"Do you already have a name for her?" Aldrian asked as he looked at his father and mother.

Aldrey nodded. "Yes, we already decided on a name for her." His gaze softened even more.

"We decided she will carry your mother's family surname. Her name is Celestina Rivas. Our beautiful angel, another blessing from the heavens for us."

Aldrian smiled. "Celestina... Celestina. Yes, it is a beautiful name."

"Do you want to try holding her?" Aldrey asked suddenly, making Aldrian raise his eyebrows.

"You should learn how to hold a baby, you know, so you won't be ignorant when you face your own child in the future," Aldrey said teasingly before he shifted the baby slightly toward Aldrian.

"Here."

Aldrian slowly took the baby from his father's arms.

"Careful, careful," Aldrey said as he finally handed the baby to Aldrian.

Once Aldrian fully held the baby, he couldn't help but feel an overwhelming affection for the little being in his arms. He kept his warm smile and spoke to her with a soft voice.

"Celestina, this is your big brother. Welcome to our family."

He then suddenly felt an intent descend from the heavens, congratulating his family and giving its blessing to his little sister.

Aldrian inwardly nodded at the heaven's gesture, and his gaze softened.

'Although I don't know our future, big brother will always protect you.' he thought.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 912 - 912: Marriage Plan

[ 1,569 words ]

For the next few days, the news that Irene had given birth to a daughter spread across the empire. The moment they heard it, many people felt happy about the arrival of a new member of Aldrian's family.

They were still in the atmosphere of victory from the war a few days earlier, so with this news, the people of the empire felt another moment of joy.

Although it was not their child, with the birth of a daughter, their emperor now had a little sister, and this was something worth celebrating.

This also became a topic among many people. Would the daughter also have the same talent as her big brother? The daughter must be beautiful when she grows up with the combination of genes from Aldrey and Irene. The daughter must be pampered by her family and by others as well.

The news also came as another chance for many parties to strengthen their relationship with Aldrian's family. Many nobles not only tried to visit Aldrian's palace directly but also visited the Flamecrest and Rivas families to offer their congratulations.

These people brought their own gifts to show their sincerity and also in the hope of strengthening their relationship with any of Aldrian's families.

These people not only came from within the empire but also from outside, mainly from the Ancient Blue Gate World. Some of Aldrian's acquaintances also decided to send their envoys to Aldrian's palace to deliver their congratulations to Aldrian's family. They also gave gifts for the little angel and handed them directly to Aldrian.

As for Aldrian, he spent most of his time with his family in the palace. He also helped take care of Celestina as the good big brother that he was. He just wanted to spend his time beside his family and would only meet guests if they were his acquaintances or from their factions.

For example, at this moment, King Ladwin visited the palace to see the baby. The king was not alone, as he also came with his wife, Queen Elaria Evergreen. They were in the vast flower garden at this moment, looking at Aldrian not far from them with Celestina in his arms.

He was standing under the Tree of Life with Sylvia floating beside him, looking curiously at the small creature in his arms. She knew that this was a baby and that it was precious to Aldrian, so she wanted to take a closer look.

Aldrian smiled as he rocked the baby slowly, and the baby's big eyes looked at Aldrian with a happy expression. The baby's eye shape and color were just like her father's, and with her black hair like her mother's, she truly combined their features. Her big red eyes looked at Aldrian's face as her small arms tried to reach for his face.

"Ack, ack," she voiced.

He smiled tenderly as he brought his face closer so his little sister could touch it. He then looked at Sylvia and smiled at her.

"Sylvia, this is my little sister. This is also your family," he said. Sylvia nodded while also trying to touch Celestina's face slowly.

Aldrian let her touch Celestina gently, and he thought it would be okay. With Sylvia's spirit body that was full of life laws, it also gave Celestina much comfort and health. Celestina, seeing Sylvia near her and trying to touch her cheek, also reacted to her.

"Ack, ack."

She moved her arms toward Sylvia, which made Sylvia not know what to do. She thought that she should touch the hand, so she touched it.

"Ack, ack." Celestina showed a happy expression, which made Aldrian smile even more. Watching how these two interacted made him imagine that they could become close friends in the future.

Seeing Aldrian enjoying his time with his little sister and Sylvia, his parents, who were seated with King Ladwin and his wife, smiled toward them. Irene could not help but speak with a slight sigh.

"He seems to spend more time with Celestina than I do with Celestina. I only have time to breastfeed her and hold her for a while before Aldrian takes her away. I think he will pamper his little sister even more in the future."

King Ladwin nodded with a smile. "I can see that. His Majesty really loves his little sister," he said. "Anyway, speaking of His Majesty, I also want to ask Lord Aldrey and Madam Irene for your opinion regarding His Majesty and Sylphia. Well, my apologies if this sounds sudden, but it is about their marriage."

Hearing that, Aldrey and Irene knew that this topic would come sooner or later, and they had also thought about it in the past.

"As we know, His Majesty is already eighteen years old, an age that is already appropriate for marriage. We would like to ask the opinion of Lord Aldrey and Madam Irene on whether it would be better for them to marry as soon as possible or much later," King Ladwin asked.

"Well, Irene and I have already discussed this matter in the past, and in the end, it still depends on Aldrian. He has the most say in it, and we support him. Even if he wants to hold the marriage at this moment, we will support him," Aldrey said.

King Ladwin nodded. "I see, well—"

"I will hold our marriage next year," Aldrian's voice suddenly came, making all of them look in his direction. He approached them with a smile as he looked at King Ladwin and Queen Elaria.

"After taking care of some matters and making sure everything is settled, which I have given myself a time limit of next year, I will marry Sylphia, father-in-law, mother-in-law," he said with full certainty, which made the king's and queen's faces turn ecstatic.

"I see, we are glad to hear that, Your Majesty," King Ladwin said, which made Aldrian sigh.

"Please don't call me that. Just act normally when we speak to each other. If father-in-law considers father and mother's feelings, then you do not have to. We are already so close, and we will formally become family, so you do not have to act so formally, even in front of father and mother. I truly feel bad. Oh, this is also for you, mother-in-law."

King Ladwin and Queen Elaria smiled when they heard that, and they could not help but feel butterflies in their hearts every time Aldrian called them father-in-law or mother-in-law.

"I see. Then, son-in-law, how about we discuss this more deeply?" King Ladwin said.

"Of course, father-in-law," Aldrian answered, which made the others giggle. Celestina in his arms could only look curiously at the people surrounding her. Aldrian then gave her to his mother and discussed the marriage with the two elves.

Aldrian knew that this matter was mostly anticipated from his relationship with Sylphia all this time. As parents, of course, they wanted certainty about the status of their daughter beside him. Although many people already regarded her as the main empress of the empire, that was only because it was known that she was his woman.

Even the status of fiancée existed only because many people saw how close Aldrian and Sylphia were, and not from any formal announcement whatsoever.

In the hearts of King Ladwin and Queen Elaria, there was still worry about Sylphia's fate. Although they had faith in his character and believed that he would not disappoint them, that worry still remained deep inside their hearts.

What they wanted was certainty.

And he would give them that, with his seriousness about their relationship.

While they were discussing Aldrian's marriage, on the other side of the palace, three women were gathered around a small table. Three cups of tea were served as they discussed their own topic.

Sylphia and Baek Jimin seemed to be giggling with teasing expressions on their faces, while Angelica was too embarrassed to look at them, which made her lower her head. Her face was flushed, and it was because of what they were talking about right now.

"What are you talking about, Sylphia? I don't know—"

"Jimin, it seems that our sister here is really shy. Even when I only asked her how far she is with Aldrian, she instantly became embarrassed without clearly answering my question," Sylphia said, cutting off Angelica's words, which made Baek Jimin giggle even more.

"Come on, Angelica, do not act ignorant. I already heard from Aldrian and Baek Jimin about you. So tell me, Angelica, have you and Aldrian already done something more intimate than holding hands? For example..." Sylphia then gave a sign with her lips.

"Or maybe it is much further, like..." She then tried to give a sign with her fingers, but Angelica instantly stopped her.

"No, no, we did not do that. We just... we just..." She became embarrassed again, which made Sylphia and Baek Jimin laugh. They could not help but continue teasing her.

Although Angelica was much older than them, in this case, they were much more "senior" than her.

Sylphia then stopped laughing, but she put on a smiling expression, a reassuring smile.

"I am serious this time, Sister Angelica. I already saw how your hidden feelings toward Aldrian in the past. Your actions and behavior toward him were something that was difficult not to notice. You were clearly attracted to him, and I thought that this was only a matter of time before you would be brave enough to declare your affection to him," she said.

"And my prediction was true. It seemed that you could not hold back your feelings and they finally burst out. And I am glad that you did that."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 913 - 913: The Same Experience?**

[ 1,592 words ]

Hearing what Sylphia had said, Angelica was stunned and slowly raised her head. She looked at Sylphia's face, which at that moment did not show a teasing expression, but instead a smile full of assurance.

Although she still felt embarrassed, it receded because of what Sylphia had just said, which made her wonder.

"Why are you thinking like that? Why are you glad that I confessed my love for him? Is that not the same as letting him split his heart among more women? Are you not afraid that his love for you will be reduced because he has too many in his harem?" Angelica asked.

Sylphia was still smiling. "Well, you are beautiful, you have a good and pure heart, you love Aldrian, and you have been close to us for so long, so we know your character."

"And also, let's just say that I know Aldrian will attract many women, and if he wants to add to his harem, he has a heart big enough to share with all of them, but then only a selected few will be able to enter his heart because of his special past and origin."

Angelica turned confused as she did not understand what Sylphia meant, but Sylphia only smiled and did not explain further. She told Angelica those puzzling words because of Aldrian's mysterious past life, which also had some sort of connection to her own past life.

She knew that Aldrian was a special existence that even the gods did not know the true origin of. She already knew this after she met Seralis, the spirit of the heavenly tree of the world, her god.

After having sex with him for the first time, her belief in reincarnation became solid without even a little doubt. That was because of the dreams or visions that she sometimes had after her first time with Aldrian.

Aldrian, who is a special existence, has a special relationship with a few of her past lives, and it made her realize that this connection might span much longer and deeper than she imagined. They met again in this life and continued again as lovers, which was more than a coincidence.

This was their fate.

The same goes for Baek Jimin, with the line of fate bringing her to Aldrian. She has some connection with his past life that made her meet him in this life and also build a romantic relationship with him. Baek Jimin already told her story about meeting the wife of the Heavenly Demon, who is the god of the demon cultivators.

There is a kind of red thread that connected all of them, which made them able to meet Aldrian in his journey, and this was something that could be traced back to their past lives.

That is why she believed that in this life, they were basically reunited once more with all of the women that he had connections with in his past lives.

Sylphia thought that Angelica somehow also had a connection with Aldrian's past life, which made her and Aldrian able to be together again.

She knew that with Aldrian's character, he would not easily accept a woman into his harem unless he felt something special for that woman.

"Angelica, with how perfect Aldrian is, I doubt that any woman could resist his charm, but not all women have the honor to be chosen by him. With your experience with Aldrian and how he affected your life, I don't doubt that it made you fall for him, and for

him to open his heart to you, it was a kind of fate for you," Sylphia said, which made Angelica even more confused.

"What are you—"

"Angelica, have you experienced anything strange that has something to do with Aldrian? For example, like a vision or something like that? When you feel that you meet him but at the same time you do not?" Sylphia said, which made Angelica widen her eyes.

"How did you know?"

Looking at Angelica's reaction, Sylphia smiled.

'As I thought,' she thought.

"Well, that is enough to show me that you are the chosen one and the correct woman for Aldrian," she added, which made Angelica narrow her eyes for a few moments before she widened her eyes.

"Wait, don't tell me you..." she said in astonishment.

Sylphia only smiled and did not answer, but that was already enough of an answer for her. She then looked at Baek Jimin.

Baek Jimin shrugged.

"Well, I am not having the same experience as her, but let's just say I have had an experience meeting an important figure just like Sylphia, and it also has a connection to Aldrian."

Although Angelica still did not entirely understand what Baek Jimin meant, from the way she spoke, it seemed that they had also gotten some sort of visions, just like her.

She knew that if they were having more or less the same experience as her, then it was not a coincidence.

As a Saintess of the church, she knew that signs from the heavens were a way for the heavens to tell her something. It could be something simple or something so profound that she did not entirely understand.

For example, when she received strange visions of the lives of some people that she thought were not her own, and she saw different men but with the same feeling that Aldrian gave her, she did not understand them.

It made her think about what the heavens were trying to convey to her.

She even once thought that she would meet a horrible fate if she had feelings for Aldrian.

But the moment Aldrian spoke to her, which made her open her heart, it gave her a sense of peace and made her optimistic that her future would not be like what she had seen in her visions.

Now that Sylphia seemed to be experiencing the same thing as hers, it made her think more about what the heavens had shown her.

If Sylphia had similar experiences, then were the heavens showing something deeper than just her possible future or her relationship with Aldrian?

All of them had a close relationship with Aldrian, which was not a coincidence and was also a clue for her.

She wanted to know the heavens' mystery that was stored for them, and for that, she wanted to know the details from Sylphia and Baek Jimin.

"Sylphia, may I ask what you are experiencing in your visions? I want to know it," she asked.

Sylphia smiled. "Of course, I will tell. This is something that you will know between our talks after all."

After that, the three women continued their discussion regarding themselves and Aldrian.

As time passed, with the people in the palace doing their activities, the sun slowly approached the horizon and finally sank with half of its body hidden beneath it.

There were no guests anymore, and Aldrian at this moment was spending his time with Sylvia, with him sitting under the Tree of Life. Celestina had already fallen asleep in her crib, which was located in her parents' bedroom.

He was playing his guqin with Sylvia listening, her body leaning against his thigh. She closed her eyes as if she were sleeping, but she was enjoying his guqin playing.

As Aldrian continued to play the guqin, someone approached him and instantly sat on both of his knees.

Sylvia looked at the figure's direction, but then, seeing that Aldrian was still playing, she did not move and kept staying in her position.

Aldrian, who was still playing with his eyes closed, knew who it was, which made him smile as he slowly opened his eyes.

Not far from him was Zander, with a respectful gesture toward him, and the moment Aldrian opened his eyes, he kowtowed to him.

"Master," he said in reverence.

"How are you, Zander? How is your adventure in the Orian continent?" Aldrian asked.

"I am good, Master, and I gained many experiences in the Orian continent. These past few months have been really valuable for me," Zander replied after he straightened his body.

Aldrian nodded. "Good."

While Aldrian went to war, he had a mission for Zander, or rather, training for him. His cultivation speed was too fast, and it would not be good if it was not followed by real experience. Real battle experience would sharpen Zander's skill and instinct. A real battle where life and death were uncertain.

Although Zander showed great skill and instinct in the tournament, he still lacked real-life experience where he could fight with the intent to kill.

Since the entire Barisan continent had united under his rule, problems caused by bad people like bandits were greatly reduced, almost to nothing, which made Aldrian have to look for another place for Zander to gain experience.

The appropriate place was, of course, outside the Aster Empire, and the place he chose was the Orian continent. There were many places where Zander could test his skill and killing intent there.

With some transportation agencies already built between the Aster Empire and other powers across the world, Zander could make his journey there.

But of course, he did not really let Zander roam by himself, but silently sent Vars with him to protect him in case Zander almost lost his life.

Aldrian continued playing his guqin while Zander kept listening, until finally Aldrian stopped his play. Aldrian smiled at Sylvia, who seemed to want to hear more as she slightly pouted.

"Let's continue tomorrow, Sylvia. I need to talk about something with Zander."

Sylvia then turned her angry direction toward Zander before she floated back to her real body.

Aldrian could only shake his head while Zander could only look confused at Sylvia's angry expression.

"Come with me. Tell me what you have experienced these past few months." Aldrian said after he stored his guqin and stood up.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 914 - 914: Zander's Experiences

[ 1,499 words ]

Zander and Aldrian took a stroll in the garden, with Zander walking behind Aldrian. While they were strolling, Zander began telling his experiences in the Orian Continent.

He was registered as an adventurer in one of the biggest adventurer guilds in the Orian Continent and took on many missions. Some of them required him to kill strong bandit groups, and that was the first time he had to kill someone.

As his first experience, of course it affected him, as it was the first time he took someone else's life. However, he told himself that the ones he killed were bad people, and he had to keep going.

But as an adventurer and as a cultivator, his challenges did not come only from bad people like bandits. There were also cases where other cultivators wanted to kill him for various reasons, so he had to defend himself.

However, not all of his experiences were about killing or fighting. He also built bonds with some people whom he could call companions or friends. They were the ones who sometimes accompanied him on his missions, which made their bond grow stronger.

Zander continued to tell his story until he was finally done when he returned to the Aster Empire. Aldrian nodded, feeling proud of Zander's achievements and character. At least he was quick to learn the cruelty of the world of cultivators. He was not entirely naïve and could act according to the situation.

His life in the Orian Continent was truly full of challenges, and he experienced hardship just like when he was in the academy. But this time, he could lose his life.

Initially, Aldrian worried that the character that was shaped during his academy days would affect Zander's character in the outside world. Maybe he would naively act kindly toward others because he did not want to become like his bully in the past.

But it looked like his worry was unnecessary, and Zander could act according to the situation and solve the problems in front of him.

However, Aldrian found something strange in his disciple when he told his story.

"Zander, did you hide a few things from me?" he suddenly asked, which made Zander stunned.

Seeing his reaction, Aldrian knew that he was correct. Zander had something on his mind, and he decided not to tell him.

Zander did not answer immediately. Instead, he seemed tongue-tied, as if he had just been found out for doing something bad. Aldrian did not force him further and simply waited for his answer in silence while they kept walking.

After a few moments of silence, Zander finally released a long breath.

"Well, actually, I got some problems in the Orian Continent," he said. He then told the untold stories.

When Zander told him that he had to face other cultivators, he also had to face some troublesome opponents. In the end, he had to kill some of them, and there were some with quite famous backgrounds.

Because of that, he ended up offending some of those backgrounds, which made him have to escape a few times.

Thanks to his tricks and preparation, he could escape from them, but they were still looking for him to this day.

Even those families tried to approach the adventurer guild he was in to hand him over to them. But fortunately, his adventurer guild is a large guild that does not easily cave in to pressure. However, those families did not give up and used their influence to try to locate him, which until this moment still has not succeeded. He could escape unscathed and return here safely.

Still, the problem is quite troublesome, and those families seem to not be giving up on their search. With their influence, if Zander ever returns to the Orian Continent, sooner or later they will find him. And there is even a chance that they could sniff his trace all the way to the Aster Empire.

Aldrian now understood the problem, but then he asked Zander,

"So why did you decide to hide this problem from me?"

Zander slightly lowered his head. "That was because I did not want to implicate Master. The point of this training is to train myself to face any challenge. If I brought Master's name into this, then there would be no point to this training."

Hearing that, Aldrian smiled and stopped his steps before turning to face Zander. He touched Zander's head, as Zander's height was much shorter than him.

"Good, very good. I'm proud of you."

Zander's eyes glimmered.

"Now, you can take a rest and do not think about the problems in the Orian Continent," Aldrian added, and Zander nodded.

"Yes, Master."

After that, he walked away from Aldrian toward the main palace. Aldrian kept looking at his figure until he disappeared from his sight before he called Vars through voice transmission. Not even five seconds later, Vars already appeared behind him and instantly went down on one knee.

"Your Majesty," Vars said in greeting.

Aldrian nodded and asked him, "Do you know the backgrounds of those who are pursuing Zander in the Orian Continent?"

"Yes, Your Majesty. They are actually local nobles of some cities, and they are quite influential in their regions. There is one marquess household and two baron households. They belong to Marquess Lored, Baron Croze, and Baron Veric, all of them from the Valhemin Kingdom," Vars answered.

"Their overall power is quite strong, with the strongest among them being from the marquess household, which has a low pseudo-immortal stage cultivator, the former patriarch of the family."

Aldrian nodded. The Valhemin Kingdom is the kingdom where King Frederick rules.

"From your opinion, will those families bring trouble to Zander in the future?"

"Those three families are quite influential in their own regions of the kingdom, which are still quite close to each other. However, their influence does not extend outside their kingdom, so as long as Young Master Zander is outside of the Valhemin Kingdom, he is safer," Vars replied.

"But the problem is, they are searching for information about Young Master through information guilds that have many connections across the continent. Once they know

Young Master's position, they could make a move, whether sending their own cultivators or hiring assassins."

"So the safest option is for him to stay away from the Orian Continent until the situation becomes safe, which will take quite a long time if there is no intervention from Your Majesty." Vars slightly paused.

"But I do not think that Young Master Zander will stay away from the Orian Continent for that long."

Aldrian turned curious.

"Why is that?"

"Well, besides the fact that he has friends there, I think Young Master is attracted to a woman," Vars replied, which made Aldrian raise his eyebrows before he smiled in amusement. He had not heard anything from Zander about this.

"Explain why you think that," he said.

Vars then told his observations of Zander, and it could be said that Zander was attracted to one woman who had become his companion. She was from one of the earl households in the Martal Empire, and they met by coincidence. Since then, they sometimes did their missions together in one group. As time passed, Zander's behavior showed that he was attracted to her.

"I see. Well, if he wants to come back to the Orian Continent in the near future, then let him be. You can keep observing him, and if there is a problem outside of your power to solve, you tell me," Aldrian said.

"Yes, Your Majesty." After that, Vars disappeared.

Aldrian continued to walk, and he could not help but smile as he thought about how Zander had grown. From his past timid and weak character to now a figure full of confidence who could build his own bonds with others.

He was glad that he could change Zander's life for the better. He was a diamond that was too valuable to be hidden, and it was only natural that he would form many bonds because many were attracted to him.

He would have many more bonds in the future.

-----

On the next day, Aldrian received more guests, and this time, it was the Dragon King and the Phoenix Queen. They met in the garden, and after a short greeting, they sent their congratulations for the birth of his little sister.

"Congratulations, Your Majesty, for the birth of Her Highness, your little sister. This is a gift for Her Highness, and although it is not much, I hope that it can benefit Her Highness," the Dragon King said while giving a wooden box to Aldrian.

"Congratulations to Your Majesty's family on the birth of Her Highness. This is also a gift for Her Highness. I hope that it can benefit Her Highness," the Phoenix Queen said while also giving a wooden box slightly larger in size compared to the Dragon King's to Aldrian.

Aldrian smiled and nodded. "Thank you for the congratulations and the gifts. I truly appreciate them," he said as he took both of the gifts.

"Your Majesty, besides coming here to offer our congratulations, we also wish to pick up Spirit Ancestor. I think everything is fine now, and Spirit Ancestor can go back home without any problems," the Dragon King said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 915 - 915: His Plan After the Wedding

[ 1,533 words ]

Aldrian nodded. The current situation was already conducive for the Spirit Ancestor to go back to the Beast Continent. He doubted that after all this time, and after the war of the Northern Star Cluster was over, those families would still pursue the Spirit Ancestor or even dare to target her.

The atmosphere of the world was still in celebration of the war's victory. If one bad event, such as the news of someone attacking the Spirit Ancestor, appeared, it would instantly attract enormous attention.

"I see, then let me call her first," he said. He sent a voice transmission to the Spirit Ancestor's guardian, and after waiting for a while, the Spirit Ancestor and her two companions came to them.

The moment the Dragon King and Phoenix Queen saw the Spirit Ancestor, they slightly lowered their heads.

"Elder, we are picking you up and will escort you home," the Dragon King said.

The Spirit Ancestor smiled as she nodded and turned to look at Aldrian, before slightly lowering her hunched body.

"Thank you for receiving me here and letting me stay in this grand palace, Your Majesty. I truly cannot think of how to repay your kindness," she said, and her two companions also bowed to him.

Aldrian just smiled as he approached the Spirit Ancestor and stopped her from bowing.

"It's okay, Elder. I'm doing it for nothing, and I'm glad that I could help you," he said.

The Spirit Ancestor nodded with a smile. "Once again, thank you," her old eyes looking at Aldrian's face.

This is the man that will bring change to all heavens. The man whose name will spread across the universe. The man who, at this moment, keeps getting brighter and brighter, his light like a star in the dark night, illuminating its surroundings so the space is not filled with darkness.

She really wanted to witness his journey until he reached the end of the road.

After a while, the Beast Continent's group left the palace. Aldrian wanted to return to his throne hall, but then he saw Sylphia approaching him in a rush. He stopped his steps and smiled at her.

"Why are you—" before he could finish his words, Sylphia suddenly hugged him, which made him stunned. But then he smiled and also hugged her waist. He could feel that she was in a good mood.

Sylphia stroked her nose against his body a few times before she looked at his face. Her beautiful face truly showed that she was really happy with her bright smile. This made him wonder what had happened for her to be this happy.

"So what is it that makes you this happy, my love?" he asked.

Sylphia was still smiling without answering him and hugged him again.

"I heard from Father that you plan our wedding for next year. To think that you already discussed that without telling me," she said.

Aldrian smiled. "Well, I don't think I need to do that. It will come as a surprise for you, and the moment you realize it, you suddenly become my wife formally."

Sylphia tightened her hug. At this moment, her heart was truly full of butterflies. She was truly happy. Finally, she would formally become his wife.

Although all this time they had already acted as one, and even all people also considered them to be like one, there was still a part of her heart that was not yet satisfied.

She wanted an event where they would declare her status beside him.

She wanted an event that would tie their relationship formally so she could say with her whole heart that she was his wife.

That event was, of course, none other than a wedding, and she was glad that Aldrian had already planned it. She did not bring up the wedding timing because she saw how busy he was with many matters. She did not want to appear annoying by bringing up the wedding matter when he seemed to have many things to do.

That was why she could not help but feel surprised and also happy when she heard from his father that Aldrian had already been planning their wedding for next year.

Sylphia then dragged him toward the other side of the garden to talk about their wedding. They discussed what their wedding would be like. Aldrian could only entertain Sylphia's enthusiasm about the topic of their wedding.

They kept talking with each other until he saw his mother taking Celestina for a stroll in the garden. He and Sylphia approached them, and Sylphia then entertained Celestina, which made Celestina happy. Her small arms tried to reach Sylphia as if she wanted to play, and Irene also let Sylphia hold Celestina.

It was as if she wanted Sylphia to get used to holding a baby as preparation for the future.

Aldrian warmly smiled as he happily looked at Sylphia and Celestina in her arms. She seemed happier and more mature with the sudden motherly aura. It was like he saw her future if they had their own child.

But then, when the topic of their child came in, he knew that he had to postpone having a child much further, even after their wedding. That was because of the things that he had already planned for the future, which made having a child sooner not recommended.

The most important thing for now was the wedding first. If it was the wedding, he could do that despite his future plans. Moreover, he knew Sylphia had already been waiting for their wedding moment.

For him, he had indeed already planned this not long before he went to war. In fact, he had already planned another wedding for Baek Jimin, and all of that would happen within two years. He would take care of and settle anything that needed to be settled in these two years.

Why was it two years?

That was because he calculated the estimated time for the armies of the devils that would come from the central region of heaven to reach him.

Two years. He did not doubt that the Vampire King was in rage after the death of his son, and with his character, he would likely come personally. At that time, he would need to take care of him and his armies. This time, it was his own problem that he had invited himself, and he would take care of it without having to involve the others.

If the Vampire King came to him personally with his armies, then he would bring something that even the entire force of the Ancient Blue Gate World, or even the entire star cluster, would find difficult to face.

He needed to face them alone without harming anyone. However facing them alone is not only as his sign of responsibility but this was also because his own personal reason. This is his personal mission and it's something that his heart wanted.

This was his journey to retake the entire universe, with the first step being to retake the First Heaven.

After taking care of the Vampire King, he needed to begin his journey toward the central region of heaven. He needed to make the entire First Heaven his domain as soon as possible. He needed to do that before any unknown factor made things difficult for him.

At this moment, he did not know what those gods were thinking and planning after all the things he had done in the First Heaven. If they did not do anything drastic, that would be good, but if they did something drastic, then it would be bad even for the entire First Heaven.

For example, they could send more troops from the higher heavens or even something extreme like what the devils did to Tarius. Those gods might even try to descend using their avatars.

With all those lingering dangers and dangerous things he needed to do, it was only reasonable to postpone having his own child. At least, he needed to make the entire First Heaven his turf first, then he could think about any possible child or not.

That was because once the First Heaven became his domain, it would limit what those gods could do in the First Heaven.

He even believed that his domain itself could strengthen the heaven so it could prevent any effort from those gods to weaken it. Therefore, those invaders would lose any means to descend, and in the end, it would also make it possible for him to block any invaders from descending.

Imagining their faces in the future, when he could make the entire First Heaven his domain, suddenly made him smile amusingly. He really could not wait to break anything that those invaders had planned for so long and see their faces when he stood face to face with them.

His mind continued to focus on what was in front of him, his warm and loving family. He also played with Celestina for a while before he had to separate again because it was time for her to sleep.

After that, he was dragged by Sylphia to gather with Baek Jimin and Angelica. Aldrian could only let Sylphia drag him and entertain all of his women with some topics of discussion after that.

His day was truly filled with the love of his family and women, which he liked. But he knew that he had to return to his normal activities soon.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 916 - 916: The Busy Months**

[ 1,584 words ]

Six months later,

The people continued their daily activities across various worlds. But for the past few months, they had heard more about the news that happened in the Ancient Blue Gate World and the Northern Star Cluster.

For the Ancient Blue Gate World, they received visits from various powers from different star clusters. Even from star clusters that were not close to the Central Star Cluster and from powers that did not normally visit it.

The other worlds across the Central Star Cluster were also affected because these powers sometimes visited them to gather information regarding the same subject.

The information regarding Aldrian the Great.

They were curious and wanted to know more about the man that many said to be the strongest cultivator despite not having the strongest cultivation. The legend that made the liberation of the Northern Star Cluster possible.

Many said that since the liberation of the Northern Star Cluster, the devils across the Central Star Cluster chose to hide and did not carry out much activity in the past months. It was reasonable because the devils in this star cluster were cut off from their big base in the Northern Star Cluster.

There was no support anymore.

The name of Aldrian the Great had already become the devils' nightmare, which made them choose to not be active for the past few months.

Another great change that happened was, of course, regarding the Northern Star Cluster. Many people started migrating to the worlds across the Northern Star Cluster and built their settlements there.

All the worlds across the Northern Star Cluster were already habitable without exception, and all of them were experiencing great development. Many cities had been built across the worlds, and the lives in those worlds started flourishing again.

Even mortals without cultivation could also stay in those worlds.

However, the growth of the Northern Star Cluster was still within the rules set by the alliance of the Central Star Cluster. There were some changes as time passed, but all of them had to go through Aldrian the Great's approval.

He had the biggest say, and that was why many people tried to visit him for many purposes.

For example, there were some powers from other star clusters that wanted a piece of territory in the Northern Star Cluster. They had to negotiate with some powers in the Central Star Cluster, and Aldrian was the most important one they needed to gain approval from.

If the others said yes but Aldrian said no, then the end result was no, and all of that time was wasted for nothing.

That was why Aldrian was also getting much busier these past few months, with many visits from various parties, and he also had his own matters to handle in the Northern Star Cluster.

At this time, all the worlds across the Northern Star Cluster had already become his domain. It took a while to reach all of those faith-gathering places, but he had done it after a few months. The worlds of the Northern Star Cluster were truly under his control.

That was also why the purification of those worlds from excessive negative energy was quick, which made them all habitable in a short time.

As the worlds across the star clusters were busy, the scene on the Barisan Continent was much busier than the rest. Thousands of interstellar vessels were landing across the continent. Aldrian had already made changes, and at this time the interstellar vessels could go into the continent and land much deeper inside.

The cities and towns across the continent had already prepared places for the vessels to land.

These vessels that came from various worlds and star clusters adorned many parts of the Aster Empire. Besides wanting to meet with Aldrian, many also came to study the continent and the knowledge that some said would make any cultivator feel baffled.

For example, the existence of six-stripe pills. It was already known that Aldrian the Great was an alchemist who could make a never-heard-of grade of pills.

The six-grade pills made any alchemist go crazy, and it was no wonder many alchemists from various origins came to visit the continent in the hope of learning from Aldrian the Great or even catching a glimpse of the pills.

The Alchemist Association was one of the places that became crowded by outsiders, as this place had been said to be where Aldrian the Great's creations were kept.

The Alchemist Association branch in one of the cities in the Eternal Sanctuary Forest even showed some of Aldrian's creations.

A few six-stripe pills were shown to those who wanted to see them by paying more. This was also one of the strategies of the Alchemist Association to increase their income.

The pills were stored inside glass cases so the people could see them. For the past months, the showcase area had been crowded with many people, many of them alchemists who wanted to study them.

"Isn't this just an energy replenishment pill? Unbelievable. How is this possible? The aura of the pill is nothing like normal energy replenishment pills. The color is so pure, and the six stripes are genuine," one of the alchemists said in astonishment as he observed the pill.

"Yes, even just being near it seems to affect my body, as I can sense a refreshing feeling," another commented.

"We should meet Aldrian the Great as soon as possible. We cannot pass up the chance to learn a thing or two from him," another man said.

"Did you just say you are still waiting in the queue so you can visit the palace?"

"Yes, and I do not know where I could meet with Aldrian the Great. But as long as I can learn something from him, I will wait even for years here."

Many discussions resounded as they watched the pills, and this kind of interaction also happened in other places but with different branches of knowledge.

In the Forgeheart Kingdom, there was a place under the management of the royal family to showcase many artifacts, and Aldrian the Great's creations were among them. As many already knew, Aldrian the Great was also a blacksmith, and an incredible one at that.

It was said that the probability of success if he decided to create a divine grade artifact was one hundred percent. In other words, he never failed in creating a divine grade artifact, something that was never heard of.

In the large building that was crowded with many people, a few artifacts received a lot of attention because of their grade. All of them were divine grade, which made all onlookers amazed and even drool as they wanted to make these artifacts their own.

Usually, divine grade artifacts would be stored and hidden from the masses. But only in this place, where not just one or two but a few divine grade artifacts were showcased to the people.

Many blacksmiths from other star clusters visited this place and observed the artifacts to study them or even gain enlightenment from them. There were swords, spears, and shields in the protected glass cases.

"Truly amazing. I can sense something unique from the artifact created by Aldrian the Great. I have already seen many divine grade artifacts, but this is the first time I can sense something unique, yet I do not know what it is," one of the observers said.

"I agree. I wonder what this special thing is that makes the divine grade artifacts created by him different? Is it also the secret to how he can create divine grade artifacts without fail?" another replied.

"Aish, if only I could meet with Aldrian the Great as soon as possible. Even I do not know when I could meet with him."

"True, I tried to visit, but it seems Aldrian the Great is quite busy. I am still waiting for my turn since last month."

Many discussions resounded as they looked at the various artifacts.

Another place that was quite crowded was the teleportation formation located near the Xin Family's secret realm. The teleportation formation that directed toward the core region, which was the only way to Aldrian's palace, was full of people who wanted to meet him.

The Xin Family's elders were quite overwhelmed by the many people who wanted to meet Aldrian over the past months. There were always people who wanted to see Aldrian, and they could not just let all of them enter at once.

They needed to enter with their same group at one time, and that was also with Aldrian's approval. If he did not want to receive a guest, then all of them could only wait.

For many people of various statuses, this kind of thing was humiliating, as they had to wait to meet someone. Many of them were nobles, and even from royal or imperial families, but they still had to wait with many others as if their status did not matter.

However, they could only swallow their displeasure.

There was no one who wanted to test Aldrian the Great's patience by inviting trouble here. His legendary stories were too terrifying to be underestimated or ignored. But many of them also hoped for someone to finally snap and look for trouble. They wanted to see if Aldrian the Great was like what many described.

While many people were in line to meet Aldrian, the person himself was in the garden of his palace, playing with Celestina.

"Ahahaha." Celestina's laughter resounded as Aldrian made her fly. She was really happy with her arms stretched forward, and Aldrian was also controlling her body so she would not fly too fast and not too high from the ground.

Not far from them, Aldrey, Irene, and Eleine were observing with smiles.

"Be careful," Irene warned.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 917 - 917: Return to Orian Continent**

[ 1,549 words ]

"Ahahahaha." Celestina laughed cheerfully, and it truly was music for the entire family. Aldrian kept entertaining Celestina until he saw her expression turn sleepy, and he knew it was time to stop.

He slowed her down, put her into his arms, and held her softly. She rubbed one eye with her small hand, and Aldrian could not help but smile softly. He then approached his mother and gave the sleepy Celestina to her.

Irene carefully took Celestina.

"Well, let's go, my love. You must already be tired from playing with your big brother," Irene said before she walked away, followed by Eleine.

Aldrian and Aldrey smiled at her, and then Aldrian sat across from his father.

"Celestina truly likes you, and you pamper her too much. I am afraid that your little sister will always come to you and ask for anything in the future," Aldrey said.

"Well, let her be, and I will give her what she wants," Aldrian answered with a smile.

Aldrey smiled and shook his head. "Suddenly, I feel bad for those people waiting to meet you. They have already been waiting for so long, and here you are playing with your family, playing with your little sister."

Aldrian shrugged. "They were the ones who wanted to meet me, and if I only spent my time in meetings, then I would never have time for my family. They can keep waiting until their time comes."

"You are so bad for that," Aldrey said, but Aldrian only smiled.

Aldrey then sighed. "But I am glad you could spend your time with your family. Initially, I was afraid that with your busy activities, you would not even have time for your little sister, which would create a distance between you two."

"But looking at how you treat Celestina, I can finally rest the worry in my heart. I do not have to think about how your relationship with her will be in the future. You will always be there for her."

"Of course. How could I ever put the matter of my little sister second? All other things can be put aside when it is about her," Aldrian answered.

Aldrey nodded. "I will have no worries about your closeness to her or how you will treat your future siblings. The experience of me looking at how siblings treat each other in noble families quite traumatized me after all."

Aldrian picked up something from his father's sentence.

"Siblings? Are you already planning for another child?"

Aldrey raised his eyebrows before putting on an obvious smile.

"Of course. We still do not have the successor for the Flamecrest family, you know? Celestina has already decided to inherit the Rivas family, so we need another one, or even more, for our family's development."

Aldrian turned speechless. More for their family's development? How many does Father want? Is he a rabbit? He suddenly felt sorry for his mother.

"Speaking of children, your wedding is getting closer. When are you giving me a grandchild?" Aldrey asked, which made Aldrian even more speechless.

Aldrian sighed. "I am sorry, Father, but I think it will not be anytime soon. Well, let's just say that I don't think it is the appropriate time yet for me to have a child."

Aldrey waved his hand. "Aishh, I know, I know. I am just joking. You are still young, and there are many things that you can do before you become a father. You can just finish your business and then think about other matters," he said, as his gaze toward Aldrian changed, as if he seemed to know something.

His gaze was deep, as if he could see something within Aldrian.

Aldrian, who saw his father's gaze like that, could not help but feel uneasy. It was as if his father knew something about him. His sensitive senses also picked up that what his father had just said was deeper than just words.

He wanted to ask something about it, but his father had already continued.

"Anyway, I heard that Zander is going outside of the empire. I heard that disciple of yours has some problems in the Orian Continent, right? Do you not worry that he might fall into danger that could threaten his life, when the problem still seems to be there since you did not take care of it?"

Seeing that his chance was lost, Aldrian smiled. "He said he will try to solve the problem, but if the problem grows too big for him to solve, I can lend a hand, so it is okay. Just let him enjoy his adventure. He needs more experience instead of cultivating here all the time."

He put aside his uneasiness and talked to his father normally again. It was as if there was nothing strange, and Aldrian simply placed his uneasiness at the back of his mind.

-----

As Aldrian and Aldrey conversed with each other, the person who had become one of their topics at this moment was in the Orian Continent.

Zander was inside one of the cities in the Martal Empire, Gerisa city. He was using a disguise technique and wearing a black robe to cover his features as he walked along the streets of the city.

He kept walking until he finally arrived at a restaurant, where he then sat at one of the tables before ordering his food.

He looked at the busy street from his table for a moment, and then he looked into the distance, where he could see a big mansion. The mansion was on slightly elevated land, and to reach it, one had to use a teleportation formation or fly using a carriage pulled by flying beasts.

The mansion obviously belonged to a noble, and from its size, it was a high-ranking noble. The mansion, in fact, was the residence of one of the dukes of the Martal Empire, Duke Seigerfield, one of the famous nobles in the empire.

As a duke with huge power and influence, he was one of the most revered nobles in the empire.

Now, why was Zander in this place?

That was because one of his acquaintances, or more precisely, his companion, lived here. This was also the place where he first saw that companion before fate made them travel together with some others on their adventure mission.

The daughter of Duke Seigerfield was the one who stayed in that big mansion and was also one of his companions.

He just wanted to visit her and see how she was doing, as it had been months since they were last in contact. In fact, he had not been in contact with any of the friends he made on this continent.

The situation at that time was quite dangerous, with his pursuers on his tail. He had escaped far away from his group because he was afraid of affecting them.

He knew that with the influence of those families, it could bring his friends great trouble.

Maybe it would not be a problem for his friends who had good backgrounds, but for those who did not, they would fall into danger. He did not want that and decided to leave them without telling them anything.

He had been on the run from those nobles for more than two weeks before he finally decided to go back to the Aster Empire when he heard that his master had returned.

He did not know how they were doing since that day, or if they were affected by his escape, but he hoped that he had not brought them trouble.

After waiting for a few minutes, his food finally came, and he started to eat. Although he thought the food here was delicious, he felt that the food prepared in the palace was much more delicious.

As he enjoyed his food, he also thought about how he could contact his group.

'Could I contact them by asking the guild?' he thought.

He quickly finished his food and paid for it before he went out of the restaurant. He walked toward the Adventurer Guild's branch, which was located not far from him.

The Adventurer Guild building was a big tower located beside the main street, where many people could be seen entering and leaving the building. This was one of the busiest places in the city.

The people who wanted to post assignments or adventurers who wanted to take assignments were all mixed inside this building.

After Zander entered the building, he was greeted by a big hall where many people were doing their own business. He ignored all of them and walked toward one of the counters where someone could ask for information regarding the Adventurer Guild.

"Welcome to the Adventurer Guild, sir. May I—" one of the receptionists greeted Zander the moment she saw him in front of her. However, she stopped her words because she recognized who he was.

How could she not know, when he was said to be one of the rare genius cultivators and also for what he did more than six months ago?

The receptionist instantly created a soundproof formation covering them so that no one else could hear them.

"Zorzal?" the receptionist asked.

Zorzal was the name Zander used when he registered as an adventurer.

Zander nodded. "Yes, it's me."

"Where have you been? We did not hear anything from you for six months. We thought that something happened to you," the receptionist said.

"Well, I had to leave and hide for months because of what happened. Anyway, I would like to ask for some information regarding the current situation and a few people," Zander said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 918 - 918: Strange Man

[ 1,573 words ]

The receptionist nodded.

"Who would you like to ask about, Sir Zorzal?"

"I want to know what happened to my last group that I traveled with. Claire, Edwin, Valik, and Froz," Zander said.

The receptionist nodded again. "I see. I will tell you the current situation first. After you disappeared, those families were still looking for you. Sometimes they tried to pressure the guild to hand over your information, but of course we did not give it to them until today."

"Because they could not find you after so long, they started to look for your group at the time of that mission." Hearing that part, Zander clenched his fist.

"They are really persistent in looking for you. Well, it is understandable after what you did. But anyway, for Claire and Edwin, who have special backgrounds, we do not need to worry about them, as they mostly lay low within their families after that time."

"But for Valik and Froz, they were from normal backgrounds, which I believe those families must already know. They seemed to target them the most, but as far as I know, they are still on the run because there is no sign of them being caught, and the guild does not know their location either." The receptionist touched her chin.

"Even if they were caught and those families did not find any information from them, they would likely spread the news of Valik and Froz being caught so you would hear of it and come to them. Well, a classic hostage situation."

Zander truly felt guilty after hearing it. Those families truly targeted his friends. He wondered what he could do so that he could help them. His power was limited, if he only depended on himself, he did not have enough power to shake those families.

He was like an ant in front of their families' power.

Unless he used his master's name—

'No, I will solve this problem myself. I will find a way,' Zander thought.

"At least that is the good news, as they have not caught them yet. But with those families still looking for you, I think it is only a matter of time before they are caught," the receptionist continued.

Zander then thought with a serious expression. The receptionist also looked at Zander, wondering what he would do.

After waiting for a few moments, he finally spoke to her.

"How do I meet the guild master?"

The receptionist was stunned. "Meeting the guild master? Do you want to ask him for help?"

Zander nodded. "Yes."

The receptionist frowned. "I do not think the guild master will help you face those nobles. I have met the guild master, and from his character, even if he is a powerful cultivator, he might not come out personally to help you because he will find it troublesome." She also thought for a moment.

"But maybe I could be wrong. I think you could try to meet him. He must already know about you because you are quite famous for being a powerful early stage cultivator and also for what you did. I think you must have caught his interest. If he does not deny your request to meet him, then there is a big chance that he might hear you out and even want to help you."

Zander nodded. "Alright, is the guild master still in the capital?"

"As far as I know, yes."

"Alright, thank you for the information. I will be going then," Zander said before he turned around and walked away.

"Be careful, Sir Zorzal. It would be a shame if you lost your life in those nobles' hands. You are one of our talented adventurers that our branch pays attention to," the receptionist said, which made Zander stop his steps. He smiled and turned his head.

"I will not let those nobles take my life," he said before he continued walking outside. But before he could take a step out, a male voice suddenly echoed clearly beside him.

"Zorzal, would you mind if I accompany you to meet the guild master?"

The moment he heard that, he widened his eyes and looked beside him. He found no one, so he scanned his surroundings, but he also did not find anyone he thought could be the one who spoke. He suddenly felt uneasy as his gaze swept across the busy hall, trying to locate the man.

But before he could look further, his body suddenly bumped into someone behind him, which made him jump slightly and turn around. His eyes widened as he saw a figure actually standing behind him, someone he had not detected at all!

The figure was a middle-aged man with a moustache. He wore a brown robe that covered his head, but Zander could still see his black hair. His expression showed an amicable smile, as if he was not trying to harm him.

But Zander did not lower his guard, since this man clearly knew what he had just discussed with the receptionist without being detected. He did not know the man's intent, so he prepared himself to escape.

In the midst of the crowd, Vars, who was sent to guard Zander, was also quite surprised by the sudden appearance of the man. That man seemed to appear in the middle of the busy hall without Vars detecting him at all. That meant this man was much stronger than him, which made the situation potentially dangerous.

However, he hesitated to make a move because he did not sense any ill intent from the man.

'This guy already sensed my presence here,' Vars thought, as he felt the man briefly glance at him when he appeared. He knew that, from the looks of it, if the man decided to be hostile, then he would have to sacrifice himself so Zander could escape.

He decided to stay still and see what the man wanted to do, as the man seemed to have his own intentions toward Zander.

Zander looked at the man warily as he narrowed his eyes, sweat dropping from his forehead.

"Who are you, sir?"

The man still smiled. "You don't have to worry. I don't have any ill intent toward you. I just want to help you, that's all. If I had any ill intent toward you, you would not realize any of it before something happened to you."

Zander gritted his teeth because what the man said was true. With a man whose strength he could not gauge, there was no way he could sense anything if the man decided to do something to him.

"Why do you want to help me?" Zander asked.

"Well, let's just say that it is my interest to help you," the man said. "However, if you don't want my help, then I will not force you. You can go on your way. But I have to warn you that if you want to meet the guild master, then you can only depend on your luck compared to being accompanied by me."

Zander frowned, starting to question the man's identity in his heart. This man sounded so confident about meeting the guild master, even though it was said to be difficult. Was this man an acquaintance of the guild master?

He began to ponder what he needed to do, and the man did not rush him, simply waiting for Zander's response.

After a few moments of thinking, Zander finally replied.

"Alright."

The man smiled. "Good. Let's go. Don't waste any more time." He then walked toward the exit of the building. Zander, who could only follow him, sighed before taking a step and following behind.

They stepped outside the building and walked toward the warp gate. There was no problem as they kept walking for a few minutes, but Zander suddenly sensed someone approaching from behind. The figure was moving quickly, walking past many people before almost reaching him.

His hand was already on his sword's hilt, ready to strike if this figure tried to harm him.

"Zorzal, is that you?"

A woman's voice suddenly resounded, making him freeze as he instantly turned his head. The moment he looked behind him, his sight fell on a beautiful woman with blonde hair.

She wore a brown robe that covered her head, but parts of her long blonde hair still flowed out from underneath it. Her clear blue eyes looked at him with a hopeful gaze that made his heart tremble.

At this moment, his heartbeat quickened, and he ignored everyone between them. Time seemed to slow for a moment before returning to normal.

"Eva—Claire?" Zander wanted to say her real name, but he quickly corrected himself and used her alias.

The moment Zander called her name, the woman's eyes showed relief. She walked quickly toward him and grabbed his hand.

"Where have you been? You suddenly disappeared for months, and I thought something had happened to you. If not for those families still looking for you, I would have thought you had already been caught by them," she said worriedly.

Zander's heartbeat quickened even more the moment she grabbed his hand, and his face flushed slightly.

"Well, many things happened, but I managed to escape," he answered.

Claire sighed. "I see. So where are you going right now? Those families are still looking for you, and it will be dangerous if someone traces your presence and informs them."

"Well, I am trying to solve that problem. At this moment, I will visit the adventurer guild headquarters and meet the guild master. This man here said he will help me," Zander replied while gesturing to the man behind him.

Claire looked at the man who was also wearing a robe, and the moment she saw his face, her eyes widened slightly.

"You—"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 919 - 919: Meeting the Guild Master**

[ 1,497 words ]

"You—" Claire wanted to say something, but she stopped herself when she saw the man give a sign with his index finger, telling her not to say anything about him.

Claire fell silent and took a deep breath. Zander looked at Claire, then at the man behind him, and then back at Claire.

"Do you know this man?" Zander asked.

Claire looked at Zander as she released his hand. "You want to meet the guild master, right? Then let me come with you."

Zander slightly narrowed his eyes because Claire did not answer his question. But from her reaction, she seemed to know the man's identity, and it looked like this man did have a relationship with the guild master.

"Alright," Zander said before they continued their journey toward the capital.

"By the way, how did you know I was here?" Zander asked Claire.

"Well, I have eyes in the guild branch who told me that you came, so I instantly came here," Claire said with slight hesitation.

Zander raised his eyebrows but then sighed.

'The receptionist,' he thought. But then confusion stirred in his mind. Was it alright for the receptionist to leak an information outside?

He did not know how much influence Claire or her family had in the adventurer guild, so he assumed it was because of her family's influence.

Not long after that, they entered the warp gate leading to the capital city of the Martal Empire, Adroadin City.

The moment they stepped out from the other side of the warp gate, the grand capital city instantly came into their sight. The floating land in the distance where the imperial family stayed, along with the many tower-style buildings, came into view.

Zander had visited this city once in the past, so he was not too surprised by its grandeur.

Moreover, after living in his master's palace for months, he no longer felt easily amazed by the grandeur of other places. From his experience, he had never seen anything in this continent that could compare to what his master possessed.

This made him admire his master even more, and once again he told himself that his master was special and unlike others.

He truly felt lucky to be his disciple.

They did not waste any time after stepping out of the warp gate. They walked toward the headquarters of the adventurer guild, which they could already see from the warp gate plaza. The large and towering building stood three kilometres away from them.

It did not take them long to reach the headquarters. After entering the building and being greeted by the big hall full of people, much busier than the branch building, the man looked at Zander.

"Let's go. Let me guide you to the guild master," the man said before walking toward one side of the hall.

Zander and Claire followed him, and they walked toward a hallway where there were stairs leading to the upper floor. Two guards were already posted there, guarding the stairs, and the moment they saw Zander and his group, one of them raised his hand.

"May I know what is your—" The guard stopped his words and widened his eyes the moment he saw the man's face under the robe.

"Sir Rubero!" the guard said in shock.

The man nodded. "I just want to meet the guild master with these kids."

"Ah, yes, please go ahead. The guild master is in his room," the guard replied.

The man nodded again and looked at Zander with a smile. "Let's go," he said before leading them up the stairs.

As they walked, Zander, who had heard the interaction just now, narrowed his eyes and looked at the man's back.

'Rubero? Where have I heard this name?' he thought for a few moments before a realization came to him.

'Rubero... the Gerisa City's adventurer guild branch master!' He had heard the name of Rubero, the branch master in Gerisa City, but he had never seen him in person. It was said that he rarely came out to meet people, and only a few individuals knew him.

These guards seemed to be among those who knew him.

But then he finally understood why this man seemed confident about bringing him to the guild master. Maybe it was because he was a branch master, so he had the privilege to meet the guild master without much trouble.

"It seems you already know me," Rubero said, looking at Zander as they walked.

Zander was stunned, but then he nodded.

"Well, who doesn't know the adventurer guild branch master of Gerisa City? I already heard your name a few times, sir Rubero, but I didn't know it was you the first time I met you, so please forgive my ignorance."

Rubero waved his hand. "Ah, that's okay. I rarely appear outside anyway, so it's reasonable for you not to know my face, and there are not many who know it either."

Zander released a deep breath and looked toward Claire.

"So you know him?" he sent her a voice transmission.

"Yes. I saw him a few times with my father. He is quite close with my father, so I know his identity. That's why it was surprising to see him with you earlier, because he is someone who rarely goes outside. Well, he is quite mysterious to many, just like the adventurer guild master," Claire answered.

"Have you met the guild master? Do you know what kind of person he is?" Zander asked.

"I never met him directly, so I don't really know what kind of person he is. But from what I heard, he is a powerful cultivator who has a close connection with the imperial family," Claire answered.

Zander raised his eyebrows, and he thought that the guild master's influence seemed much deeper than he initially believed. Maybe that was why the adventurer guild could stand strong all this time, not only because of the guild master's power, but also because of his connections.

It was no wonder that nobles across the Orian Continent couldn't do much against the adventurer guild if they ever had a problem with them.

They kept walking upward, passing several floors. As they moved to higher levels, the number of people gradually decreased. It was reasonable because the higher floors had stricter requirements, such as adventurer class or purpose of visit.

For Zander, under normal circumstances, he would only be allowed up to the third floor out of eleven, even though he was a special genius whom the guild paid attention to.

Every time they passed a floor and encountered guards, they were always allowed through simply because they saw Rubero. This made Zander wonder if Rubero's identity was much deeper than what was shown on the surface.

Could a branch master really gain that much respect and recognition from the guards here, enough for them to let him pass without any kind of checking?

He doubted it.

The only thing that came to his mind was that Rubero might have a close relationship with the guild master, and these people knew about it.

"Do you know what kind of connection Sir Rubero has with the guild master? I don't think their relationship is simple after seeing how these people greeted him," Zander sent another voice transmission to Claire.

"This is also my first time seeing him greeted like that here, and I also think he has a special connection to the guild master, but I don't know how close. But looking at how these guards gave special treatment to Sir Rubero, I can guess he is pretty close and might even have a personal connection with the guild master," Claire answered.

After walking for a while, they finally arrived at the highest floor and reached a lone room. Beside the door, a woman was seated at her own desk, and she seemed to be working as she read several papers in her hand.

Sensing someone approaching, the woman raised her head and looked toward them. The moment she saw Rubero, she lifted her eyebrows.

"Sir Rubero? It's truly surprising for you to visit here. Do you want to meet the guild master?" she said in surprise.

Rubero nodded. "Yes, and also say that I brought Zorzal and Claire."

"Alright," she said before she stood up and entered the room beside her.

After a few seconds, the woman came out.

"Please head in, Sir Rubero," she said as she opened the door fully.

Rubero walked inside without any hesitation, and Zander and Claire followed. After they entered, they finally saw a middle-aged man sitting behind a large table.

He had long brown hair with a short beard covering his chin and lower jaw. His sharp eyes made him look cunning. Added with the smile he showed at this moment, he really looked like a cunning fox.

The man gaze shifted to Claire first, and then to Zander.

Zander felt uneasy when he saw the man's gaze lock onto him. That gaze felt as if it could read everything about him, a gaze that seemed to know anything.

Although the man did not release any aura, Zander's instinct knew that this man was the most dangerous person in this place. This was the hidden powerhouse.

'So this is the guild master of the adventurer guild, Alfred Radickson,' Zander thought.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 920 - 920: Not Deterred

[ 1,478 words ]

The guild master smiled while looking at Zander for a moment before his gaze shifted to Rubero.

"I did not expect you to visit, but to think that you would come with unexpected guests, well..." his gaze then returned to Zander again.

"But not so unexpected, I guess."

Zander truly felt uncomfortable with the way the guild master looked at him, but he did not show it and only gazed at the guild master normally.

"I'm just helping our friend here meet you, since he said he wanted to meet you," Rubero said, signaling to Zander.

"Is that so?" the guild master said with a smile, his gaze still locked on Zander.

Zander then bowed to him.

"Adventurer Zorzal greeting the guild master."

The guild master nodded. "Zorzal, huh? I already heard about you from Rubero's assessment report in the past. For someone to be praised by Rubero, it piqued my interest, and I have to say that you are truly like what he described—wait, no, you are more than what I initially thought."

"And after what you did in the Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb, my interest in you rose greatly. And you wanting to meet me must be regarding that problem after that event, I suppose?" he said, which made Zander stunned before he nodded.

"Yes, I would like to ask for the guild master's help. I know that with my current power, I lack the means to face all those nobles, so I would like the guild master's support in this matter."

The guild master kept smiling and nodded. "So, what is in your mind? What would you like me to do for you to get out of this situation?"

Zander was slightly stunned. The guild master was truly direct, but that was good, since he could also speak directly. He went silent for a moment before he opened his lips. "I would like the guild master to help my friends, Valik and Froz, who at this moment seem

to be pursued by the nobles looking for me. Give them protection so those nobles cannot harm any of them."

"I also implore the guild master to help me by releasing a statement—only a statement from you personally—that you would support me. With you announcing your statement, those nobles will likely back off. I know that with your reputation, your words carry weight for those nobles."

Hearing that, the guild master kept his smile. "You are quite brave to ask me to release my personal statement regarding your own problem. I have never helped any specific adventurer since I took the seat as guild master. The most I or the adventurer guild does is keep an adventurer's information secret, that's all."

"What you ask is the same as asking for special treatment, and you want me to do something I have never done. It is easy for you to say that I only need to release my personal statement, but that is the same as forcing me to act exactly as I say in that statement."

"If I do what you ask, then that would mean I am making those nobles the guild's enemies entirely. I will not feel the effect, but the adventurer guilds in their territories would likely be affected by their animosity."

The guild master then stood up and walked around the table.

"The confidence for someone unknown like you to ask for my favor like that... although you are a rare genius in my guild, you are still a sprout in my eyes. You are powerful, yes, but many could still kill you easily. You have not grown enough to the point where I would think it is beneficial for me to help you."

"So tell me, why should I help you?" he asked as he stopped right in front of Zander.

Claire, who stood behind Zander, stepped forward.

"Guild master..."

"Do not intervene. I know what you are going to say, but I have my own interests, and I cannot just throw them away because of a nobody," the guild master said, which left Claire tongue-tied. She felt overwhelmed by the guild master's presence, which demanded respect and felt utterly overbearing.

She bit her lips and looked at Zander's back with worry.

For Zander, he felt his soul shaken by the guild master's aura that was slightly leaking out. It was as if the guild master wanted to put him in his place after he said something that offended him. The guild master's presence felt like a giant wall at this moment, high and mighty, looking down on him.

Sweat rolled from his forehead, and he felt as if his body was being pressed by something heavy. He knew all these sensations came from the guild master's overbearing presence.

However, Zander took a deep breath to calm himself, and his gaze remained determined. There was no fear in his eyes, and he kept his head lifted. He braced himself as he remembered that he was the disciple of a person who was already considered a legend and even a god.

He could not show weakness. Instead, he would show his pride. He would show his confidence and demeanor as the disciple of Aldrian the Great.

His eyes grew firmer as he looked directly into the guild master's eyes.

The guild master, seeing that there was no fear in Zander's gaze, raised his eyebrows in amazement. Zander could still withstand the leaking aura that was being directed at him. As a peak Earl stage cultivator, that was something impressive in his eyes.

Moreover, with those unwavering and determined eyes, the guild master knew that Zander's mind was already strong enough to fight fear even when facing a cultivator of his level.

He smiled, wanting to see what Zander would do after this.

"I know that what I asked is too much, as I touched the guild master's interests and could bring trouble to the adventurer guild. However, I did not come without something that could compensate for the trouble that might arise with those nobles," Zander said.

"Oh? What kind of compensation do you have, for you to seem this confident?" the guild master asked.

"As many already know, when our group was in the Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb, I was the one who obtained his true inheritance because I solved Sword Emperor Jitian's puzzle. If the guild master helps me, I will give half of the treasures and also the cultivation technique of Sword Emperor Jitian. I will even give the Sword Emperor's record, which is also included in his inheritance," Zander said without hesitation.

After Zander said that, the others widened their eyes in shock.

"Are you serious, Zorzal? That is the inheritance you gained through struggle, and the thing that put you in this situation. You are giving most of it away without hesitation?" Rubero asked in astonishment.

The incident in Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb a few months ago was what caused Zander to be pursued by the three noble families.

At that time, the news of the appearance of the tomb of one of the strongest cultivators to ever live in the Ancient Blue Gate World shook the continent.

When most of the powerhouses of the continent departed for the war, many saw it as an opportunity to gain the inheritance of the continent's legend. All parties across the continent tried their luck in the tomb, and many from the adventurer guild were involved as well, including Zander and his group.

The tomb was full of challenges, and many people died. In the end, Zander was the one who gained the inheritance.

Then the classic situation of the cultivation world unfolded, where many cultivators pursued him in an attempt to snatch the inheritance from him.

He had to kill many, and unfortunately, three of them happened to be descendants of nobles. Two of them were even considered the hope of their families as successors.

With that alone, the vengeance of the three noble families was already sealed, and they became hellbent on hunting him.

All of this happened because of the treasures of the legendary cultivator, who is known by almost every cultivator in the Orian continent. And now, the man who obtained that inheritance was actually using those treasures as a bargaining chip?

Zander did not change his expression and nodded.

"Yes, and I already read the content of the cultivation technique and the record, and I think it will be better if I give them to the adventurer guild since I already know their content. Do not even think about searching my memories or trying to find the inheritance after killing me. Believe me, I have already placed the inheritance somewhere safe, where not even the guild master can take it without me retrieving it myself."

The guild master's expression no longer showed a smile. Instead, it became neutral as his gaze locked onto Zander's eyes. It was as if he wanted to see how serious Zander was.

Zander also did not look away and stared back at the guild master.

After a few moments of silence, the guild master suddenly smiled before bursting into laughter.

"Buahahahaha!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 921 - 921: Already Know

[ 1,520 words ]

"Buahahahaha!"

Zander was stunned when the guild master suddenly burst out laughing. He felt confused about what was so funny about their interaction just now.

From his perspective, even the way he spoke earlier was quite rude and would certainly offend the guild master, but instead the guild master was laughing.

The guild master stopped laughing and looked at Zander with a gaze full of approval, then nodded.

"What a brave lad. A great quality for a great cultivator. I like it," he said, which made Zander even more confused.

"Excuse me, guild master, but what do you—"

"I will help you," the guild master said, which left Zander astonished.

"What?"

Seeing Zander's reaction, the guild master smiled in amusement. "What? I said I will help you. And regarding the inheritance of the Sword Emperor Jitian, you keep that. You are the one who earned it, and it is only right that you are the one who has it." The guild master then waved his hand.

"Just consider it as me helping an important member of my guild. And regarding your friends Valik and Froz, you don't have to worry about them. We will take care of them."

Hearing that, Zander released a slight sigh of relief. Although he still felt uneasy because of the strangeness of the guild master, at least he got his word for helping him. He did not know if the guild master had other plans for him, but he could think about that later. He bowed to the guild master.

"Thank you for your help, guild master."

"No problem. Anyway, you better stay in this city for a while. Although those families don't have any influence here, their eyes might reach this city. Let my announcement

reach those families first, and the situation become conducive for you to take your journey freely across the continent," the guild master said.

Zander nodded. "Yes, guild master."

"Now go. I still have something I need to finish."

"Then my apologies if I already disturbed your time. Please excuse me, guild master," Zander said as he bowed, followed by Claire, before they stepped out of the room.

After they left the room, Rubero looked at the guild master with a smile.

"Is it necessary for you to act like that when you already want to help him? What if he keeps remembering how you acted toward him and he holds a grudge because of it?"

The guild master crossed his arms on his chest as he replied,

"I don't think so. From his expression and gaze, he is not the type of petty person who holds a grudge because of a simple reason. He has his own red line, and that is the only thing that matters to him. I think one of his line is his friends. Didn't you see how he came back to this continent for his friends and even came to me to ask for help? He is a man with standards."

Rubero nodded, but then his expression turned curious.

"Are you sure that he is Aldrian the Great's disciple? I know that you already told me at that time, but you did not explain what made you so sure. He is indeed extraordinary compared to others, but still, is he really his disciple?"

The guild master smiled with full confidence. "A hundred percent. Although he uses a good disguise technique, there is still one thing that gives away his identity."

"What is it?" Rubero asked.

The guild master looked at him. "His swordsmanship style. That is something that would be difficult for him to hide from me. When you gave me the recording of his assessment test of combat, I felt a strange familiarity with the style of his swordsmanship. Although he seemed to hold back his full power, I could still see some of the familiar style from his sword movements."

"I knew that my feeling was not fooling me, and I finally realized that I had already seen that kind of swordsmanship in the Barisan Continent."

"When I visited the Barisan Continent, I also watched their grand tournament, when the contestant named Zander appeared and shocked many people, including me. Someone with more potential than the Sword Maiden appeared in the Barisan Continent—well, we

put aside Aldrian the Great, of course. That man is a monster on his own level," he added with a slight joking tone.

"I already saw Zander's swordsmanship and it amazed me. I thought that it might be his own style or Aldrian the Great's style. It is really unique that I still remember it until today."

Rubero nodded. "I see, but there is still something that bothers me. Let's just say that Zander was visiting this continent in disguise to train. Then he fell into trouble with those nobles later."

"Why did he come to you for help instead of his own master? I think asking for help from his master is easier and more impactful than asking you—well, no offense, but that is the truth. I believe even the name Aldrian the Great alone is enough to make those nobles run with their tails between their legs."

The guild master kept his smile as he walked toward the large window behind his table. The window showed the grandness of the capital city.

"That's why I like Zander. Aldrian the Great not only has a powerful disciple but also one with good character, something rarely seen in youngsters with great backgrounds or backing." He then stopped right in front of the glass of the window.

"Zander did not depend on his backing to solve his problem. I doubt that Aldrian the Great does not know about this problem, and the fact that he did not make any move shows two possibilities. The first one is that he believes Zander can solve it himself, and the second is that Zander asked his master to let him solve the problem on his own."

"No matter which possibility it is, it only shows how good Zander is for being confident in himself and self-dependent. He does not want to trouble other people."

"Someone like that, if he can grow to his full potential, will not become a scumbag powerful cultivator like many cultivators with noble backgrounds. He will grow into a powerful cultivator with a noble heart, something rare in this cultivation world." As the guild master said that, his face showed a glad expression.

Rubero also smiled as he heard it and nodded. "That's true." He then walked and stood beside the guild master.

"However, although you sound so noble, in the end you still prioritize your own interest. Isn't that why you declined Zander's compensation? It's Sword Emperor Jitian's inheritance we're talking about, and you just declined it. You must be thinking of giving yourself a good score in Aldrian the Great's mind, right?" Rubero said as he looked at the scenery outside.

"What a cunning fox."

Hearing that, the guild master still smiled, but then he shrugged.

"Well, it's a good investment. To be honest, I was truly tempted when Zander offered Sword Emperor Jitian's inheritance, but after thinking for a moment, I decided that building a good relationship with Aldrian the Great will be more beneficial for me. It will be much easier to communicate with him in the future."

Rubero only smiled at how this friend of his was already thinking far ahead. He already knew his character, so he was not surprised. But then his expression turned uncertain.

"Then what will we do if those nobles or anyone still pursuing Zander do not stop after you announce that you are backing him?"

Hearing that, the guild master's eyes glistened dangerously.

"Well, then too bad. It looks like we will need to use more extreme means to take care of this matter. Let those nobles experience fear once in a while so they stop being arrogant. They think that just because they are from a different kingdom they can act as they please? Too bad for them—they will not realize what is coming for them."

"The most important thing is that whatever happens, we must make sure Aldrian the Great does not make a move himself. I'm afraid hell will break loose, and we could be affected because of it. We have to make sure we can help Zander take care of his problem," the guild master said with seriousness.

Rubero also agreed since he knew it would be terrifying if someone like Aldrian the Great handled a problem like this.

"Anyway, Brother Kruger also knows about Zander's identity. Well, I don't know how he figured it out, but he also saw the grand tournament at that time. He might have seen something from Zander that made him sure it was really him," the guild master said.

"More than half a year ago, he came to me and asked about Zander, and at that time both of us agreed that it was Zander. That's why he just let his daughter get close to him. Well, I don't blame him though," he added, which made Rubero smile.

"Well, that cunning bastard. What a clever move," Rubero commented.

While the guild master and Rubero continued their conversation, Zander and Claire were already on the ground floor and on their way outside the headquarters.

As they walked, Zander was still thinking about his meeting with the guild master.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 922 - 922: The Pursuer

[ 1,492 words ]

Zander just could not help but think that all of this had been solved much more easily than he had anticipated. He had already thought about how he would persuade the guild master so that he would help him. He had even offered Sword Emperor Jitian's inheritance.

However, the result was much better than he had expected, and it made him suspicious instead. He did not know the guild master's character, but was he really that amicable and generous?

He just felt that the guild master had his own plan, one that he did not know about. Maybe the guild master would ask for something that he had to fulfill after he helped him.

That was a possibility.

He might ask for compensation after he was done helping him. It would create a sense of debt and gratitude, which would make it difficult for him to refuse whatever the guild master asked in the future.

'Or is Master helping me somehow?' he thought, but then he shook his head.

His master did not know his plan or what he would do to solve his problem. If he did not know what he intended to do, then his master could not help him behind the scenes with something like meeting the guild master.

"Well, that was quite easy. I thought the guild master would give you a hard time," Claire's voice suddenly resounded, pulling Zander out of his thoughts.

Zander nodded. "Yes, even I did not expect it to be this easy."

"I wonder if the guild master is always like that, but I just cannot help thinking that he is hiding something from you. He seems to have his own plan," Claire said.

Zander released a sigh. "Well, that is also what I think, but I do not think we will know what is on his mind. For now, I am just grateful that he is willing to help us. As for the rest, I will wait and see the nobles' reactions. I hope they know when to stop."

Claire also released a sigh. "I hope so." She then looked at him. "So what are you going to do after this?"

"I will stay in this city for a while, just like the guild master suggested. I don't want to attract unknown trouble by traveling outside for now. It's not good to add a burden to the guild master who is already helping me."

"I see, well..." Claire's voice suddenly turned hesitant. "If you don't mind, may I follow you?"

Badump!

Zander's heartbeat quickened. His face slightly flushed as he looked in another direction.

"Well, I don't think that is a wise decision. Although I might be safe in this city, I am still being searched for by those people. I'm not entirely out of danger yet, and there is still a possibility that they will find me and do something to me. I don't want you to be affected by it," he said.

Claire turned her head to look directly at Zander.

"You don't have to worry about that. I can take care of myself. Don't you already know who I am? Those nobles would not dare to do anything to me. You only need to make sure you stay safe. I will not let you face this problem alone when we are supposed to be one group."

Zander felt as though his heart was about to burst from her supportive words, and he tried his best not to show his shy expression to her.

Claire also looked in another direction as they continued walking along the streets of the city.

"Thank you, Evalina," Zander said. He finally called her by her true name, which made her glance in his direction and smile slightly. They continued walking without a destination, in silence, but there was no awkward atmosphere.

Instead, they seemed comfortable in each other's presence, creating a calm atmosphere that made them look like a couple of longtime friends. Longtime friends who were close to each other and shared their own stories between them.

-----

On the other side of the continent, in the Valhemin Kingdom, the noble house of Marquess Lored was one of the noble houses that were quite famous in the kingdom.

To be fair, all marquesses in the kingdom were quite famous, but the Marquess Lored household was one of the strongest among them.

With their status and power, there were only a few who could touch or offend them.

However, recently, they had become even more famous because someone actually dared to offend them. Someone dared to kill one of their descendants, and not just anyone, but their most promising descendant, who had been predicted to become the next successor.

The incident in Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb truly shook the entire Valhemin Kingdom, as someone had killed many people. The shocking part was that the victims were not only from the Marquess household, but also two other nobles. All of them were descendants of their respective main families.

This incident was still being talked about in some parts of the kingdom, and for Marquess Lored, it was not only a situation of grief, but also one of humiliation.

At this moment, he stood inside his private room within his mansion and looked outside with a calm expression. However, deep inside, rage and vengeance were burning. His prideful son had actually been killed by a nobody from the Adventurer Guild.

When he returned from the war of the Northern Star Cluster, he only then found out what had happened while he was gone, and it made him truly angry. A moment that should have been full of pride and celebration had instead turned into grief and fury.

He tried to pressure the Adventurer Guild, but he knew that his influence and power were not enough to move them. Even with his father also helping, it did not make any difference. The Adventurer Guild was a powerful organization with deep foundations, one that his own family could not possibly shake.

He kept thinking about where the bastard who had killed his son had gone. His family had already deployed many of their cultivators and used their influence. They were also working together with other nobles to search for him, but they still could not find him.

They had also employed many spies from third parties, such as agencies that specialized in tracking people. They had even tried to use someone with divination abilities to help them, but that had been useless. The diviner had instead refused to tell them the result of his divination, rejected all of their payment, and fled.

He really wanted to pull his hair out in frustration. Imagining that the person might have already escaped outside the continent truly infuriated him, as that would make the search extremely difficult.

He finally used another means to look for that man, and that was to search for people who were close to him. He received a report that the man had been moving with a

group before he killed many people, including his son, so those people in the man's group became the best way for him to find the killer.

After deeply investigating the people surrounding the man, he received both bad news and good news. The bad news was that there were two people in the man's group whom he could not touch.

If he touched them, the problem would become much bigger, to the point that it could even drag two nations into the matter, one of which was the strongest empire on the continent. That was something his family could not bear the consequences of.

But the good news was that there were another two people who came from ordinary backgrounds. This meant they could be kidnapped, and information could be obtained from them to locate that man. They could also be used as hostages so that the man would come out if he cared about his friends.

However, even after all this time, they still could not catch them. They were able to hide well and escape quickly. They were also clever enough to move into other kingdoms or empires, which made the pursuit difficult. As adventurers, they truly knew many places where they could run and hide.

As Marquess Lored was still thinking about how he should find his son's killer, the sound of knocking resounded from the door.

"Come in," he said without turning around.

A man in butler attire then came in and approached the marquess.

"My apologies, my lord. There has been a new development regarding the search, and I think you would like to read it." The butler then took out a scroll from his storage ring.

Marquess Lored turned his body and looked at his butler before shifting his gaze to the scroll in his hand. He took the scroll and immediately read its contents for a few moments.

After he finished reading it, he could not help but smile and lift his head.

'This is truly good news. Now let's see if you can still escape after this. Even if you are in a place where I cannot kill you, I will make you come to me!' he thought.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 923 - 923: Protection?

[ 1,536 words ]

On one side of the Orian Continent, inside one of the cities within the Cerdian Kingdom, a man could be seen using his movement technique to run from his pursuers. The man had short brown-reddish hair and a young-looking face with a scar on his cheek. He was wearing a brown robe that covered his entire body and head.

His movement was fast, and sparks of flame appeared from his feet each time he stepped on the ground or when his feet touched something as a foothold.

The man was trying so hard not to get caught, and from his strained expression, it could be seen that he had already been running for a while. His aura at the high marquess stage was vivid enough for anyone to sense.

He ran from one alleyway to another, evading many passersby without crashing into them. The passersby who saw him running from something felt confused, but a few seconds later, they saw his pursuers.

Several figures in black robes moved swiftly after him. Some of them were at the marquess stage, but there were also a few who were even at the duke stage.

Looking at the scene, the passersby wondered what had happened.

The man who kept running gritted his teeth. At this moment, he felt not only tense but also regretful.

'Damn it, to think that I happened to meet their eyes. Truly a bad luck. If only I had not stopped to buy a drink in that tavern,' he thought.

'To think that place was one of the safe houses of the Dark Viper.'

The Dark Viper was one of the underground organizations where people could use their services, such as espionage, assassination, and even searching for a person. They were one of the underground groups that had connections across the continent and many clients.

From commoners to nobles, they accepted tasks from anyone who did not want to dirty their own hands.

The man knew that the ones pursuing him were from the Dark Viper because he knew their style and how they operated. He had escaped from them several times over the past few months.

'Damn you, nobles,' he thought as he kept running, but the pursuers seemed to be getting closer.

He knew that one of their clients was a noble whose descendant had been killed by Zorzal. That was the only thing that made sense for why these people were suddenly pursuing him.

With Zorzal having suddenly disappeared and them being unable to catch him, they must have turned their attention to him or the others in his group.

Since he was being pursued by the Dark Viper, he had lost contact with the others as he had to keep changing locations. He had already thought about escaping to another continent, but then he realized that those nobles and the Dark Viper must have already anticipated it. They would likely already be waiting for him to appear.

'Shit, they almost got me. It looks like I have to fight to the death this time,' he thought. He knew that his tricks of escape would be useless this time because his pursuers would not be fooled again.

He knew that his probability of winning was zero because he was outnumbered and also lacked the strength to face all of them. There were even a few duke stage cultivators among them.

He decided to stop his movement in one of the deserted alleyways and turned his body to look at his pursuers. After a few seconds, several figures finally appeared and stopped not far from him. There were ten of them, with three at the duke stage while the rest were at the marquess stage.

All of them stopped at positions that made his escape impossible. Some were on the rooftops, while the rest blocked both sides of the alleyway.

"Tired? Well, it looks like it's the end of your escape," one of the duke stage cultivators said to him with a slight mocking tone.

The man did not answer. Instead, he thought about how he should fight them in a way that might give him a chance to live.

"Do you think about fighting us? Well, too bad—"

Grab!

"Uwokh!"

Suddenly, before the duke stage cultivator could finish his words, someone grabbed his neck from behind. This made the others look in his direction with stunned expressions.

They were shocked, as a person had suddenly appeared behind the duke stage cultivator without any of them detecting this person at all!

A middle-aged man with a burly figure, wearing tight attire that showed his powerful muscles. He smiled as he lifted the duke stage cultivator easily and—

Crack!

With his grasp, he easily broke the man's neck, killing him instantly. Before the other Dark Viper members could make their move, several figures suddenly appeared as well. All of them attacked those on the rooftops and the ones blocking the other side of the alleyway.

The burly figure did not stop after killing one of them and continued his assault. With a casual punch, he destroyed the skull of another duke stage cultivator, then used an elbow strike to attack the last one. Their heads were entirely deformed and unrecognizable.

As for the other Dark Viper members, they were also easily killed. Everything happened so fast that they could not even react to the presence of these attackers.

The man who witnessed it all was truly speechless. He did not know who these people were or why they suddenly attacked the Dark Viper members. However, whoever they were, if they decided to target him as well, he could only resign himself to his fate.

There was no way he could survive facing these people. The burly man was a pseudo immortal foundation stage cultivator, while the rest of the figures were emperor stage cultivators.

His body tensed as he waited to see whether these people were friends or foes. Sweat rolled down his forehead, and he could only remain wary, even though he knew he could not do anything in this situation.

"Valik, isn't it? Come with me. You had better stay at our place until the situation is safe," the burly man said, which made the man, who was actually Valik stunned.

These guys came to save him?

"You came to save me?" he could not help but ask.

The burly man smiled. "Well, can't you see?"

Valik frowned. "Who are you? Why did you save me?"

"We are from the Adventurer Guild. As for the reason, let's just say it's something from higher up, so you don't have to worry too much," the burly man answered.

Valik grew even more confused because the situation was truly strange. The higher-ups of the guild had sent someone to help him? What the hell was going on?

As far as he knew, the Adventurer Guild never did something like this, sending people to save their guild members. That was because the status of guild members was not truly tied to the guild, as they came from various backgrounds. Therefore, the higher-ups of the guild had no obligation to save every member if they fell into trouble.

The adventurer status existed only so they could gain benefits as adventurers, such as taking tasks and receiving payment after completing them.

If the higher-ups of the Adventurer Guild were treating a guild member like him this way, then something big must have happened behind the scenes.

-----

In the capital city of the Martal Empire, Zander had already found accommodation by staying in one of the inns. Evalina also stayed in the same inn and even took the room beside his. Zander did nothing besides cultivating.

Although he did not have an appropriate environment to cultivate, he could still cultivate normally, though it was much slower.

As he continued cultivating, unknown to him, outside the inn there were already several people approaching with ill intent toward him. They did not hide themselves by covering their faces or bodies. Instead, they blended in with the crowd so that no one was suspicious of them.

'Remember, act fast after we go in. The moment you see the target, incapacitate him, take him, and escape. We only have ten minutes at most to leave the city,' one of the men in the group said through voice transmission.

'Yes, my lord,' the others responded, and after that, they began moving toward the inn with the intent to start their mission.

However, as they reached the inn's gate, the figure who acted as their leader finally noticed that some of their members had disappeared.

'Where are Croz, Truel, and Ulric?' he asked.

The others also finally realized that they were missing some members and looked at each other.

The leader sensed that something was wrong and spread his spiritual sense to check their surroundings. He soon discovered another strangeness and looked toward the rooftops of the nearby buildings.

'The team standing by on the nearby rooftops has also disappeared!' he thought.

"Argh!"

Before he could think further, he suddenly heard a yelp from some of his members. When he turned his head, all of his members had disappeared right in front of him!

He did not have time to process what was happening before he suddenly felt his body engulfed in darkness. Before he realized it, he had already appeared in a different place.

He found himself in a deserted alleyway, already being choked by someone. Before he could say anything, a dagger was stabbed straight into his forehead, killing him instantly.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,630 words ]

Vars looked at the man he had just killed without much expression.

'A bunch of pseudo Immortal Foundation stage cultivators. They truly want to make sure that the young master cannot escape,' he thought.

He then used shadow laws to engulf all of the corpses, leaving no traces behind, before he disappeared and reappeared on a rooftop. He looked at another figure who was also standing on a rooftop across the street and looking in his direction.

Around that figure, there were a few traces of the corpses of those who had attempted to ambush Zander. That figure had also just finished destroying the corpses by pouring a liquid that caused them to melt entirely.

The figure was wearing a black robe but did not cover his head, allowing Vars to see him clearly. He was a middle-aged man with the same cultivation stage as Vars, at the middle Pseudo Immortal Establishment realm.

Vars knew that this man was the hidden guardian sent by Duke Seigerfield to protect his daughter. That figure always followed her in the shadows, and because of his role, there had been a misunderstanding between them in the past. They had nearly fought when that figure thought that someone was tailing the duke's daughter.

However, they eventually understood each other and continued to do their own jobs without interfering in one another's affairs. Unless their masters were involved, they did not engage in conversation or work together like this.

Vars nodded to him, and he responded in the same manner before both of them disappeared.

-----

A few hours later, in the mansion of Marquess Lored, the marquess himself sat in his dining room with his family. There were his wife and their two children, one male and one female.

Marquess Lored wore a calm expression as he drank his wine, while the others were still feasting on the food in front of them, except for his wife. The beautiful blonde-haired woman looked at the food before her with eyes burning with fury. She gritted her teeth and looked at the marquess.

"Did we finally catch him?" she asked.

Marquess Lored put the glass of wine on the table and glanced at his wife with a smile.

"It should be. Although he is in a place that is quite dangerous for us to move on our own, he will still be caught. Those Dark Vipers are a tough bunch, and I already paid a heavy price for them to do their job. They will not let their prey go again this time."

His wife's expression turned vicious.

"If he is successfully caught, I would like to torture him personally," she said. "How dare he... how dare he... my son." Her voice broke as she truly grieved for her son, the son she had paid special attention to because of his talent.

Seeing her deep sorrow, Marquess Lored spoke to her.

"You can do it later. I will make sure he does not have a good death. I would also like to torture him myself." His eyes glistened dangerously.

Hearing their parents, their two children did not show any expression, but inwardly, they were actually happy every time their parents brought up the matter of their dead brother. They were deeply envious of how their parents had treated him because of his talent and had already been waiting for this kind of moment.

They never liked their brother, not only because of the preferential treatment he received from their parents but also because of his conceited character. He also liked to bully them, and they could only endure it silently.

However, the moment they heard the news of their brother being killed, they were truly rejoicing.

Because of his arrogant attitude, they knew that sooner or later he would bring about his own doom, and that time had truly come. Because of his arrogance, he was killed by a nobody.

With his death, their lives would become much easier without a bully.

As the family was still in the dining room and enjoying their time, suddenly the marquess's butler came in from the side door in a rush. When the marquess saw his butler enter so hurriedly, he knew that he was likely bringing news, so he allowed him to approach.

The butler then lowered his body and whispered something to the marquess, which made the marquess widen his eyes in shock. He looked at his butler.

"What?!"

-----

Across the Orian Continent, an announcement made by the Guild Master of the Adventurer Guild became a headline topic. Many people were still often talking about the incident in Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb, so they still remembered Zorzal's brave actions when he killed some noble descendants.

With the Guild Master now meddling in this matter, people were automatically talking about it and thought that it was an interesting development, wanting to see how the nobles or anyone opposed to Zorzal would react.

The Adventurer Guild Master announced that he was supporting Zorzal and placing him under his protection. He even firmly stated that anyone who tried to harm Zorzal would be the same as harming the interests of the Adventurer Guild, and that he would personally make a move if anyone still attempted to hurt Zorzal.

This announcement, of course, caused many to raise their eyebrows, as they had never seen such an action from the Guild Master of the Adventurer Guild.

They could not help but suspect that something had happened behind the scenes after the months-long disappearance of Zorzal. The nobles or anyone who was still searching for Zorzal had been unable to find him all these months, and then suddenly, the Guild Master of the Adventurer Guild made such an announcement.

They were interested to see what those nobles would do next.

Would they stubbornly continue to look for Zorzal, or would they heed the Guild Master's warning?

The Adventurer Guild Master was not someone to be underestimated. Although he rarely showed himself to anyone, his name was already famous as a strong cultivator. He himself had been an adventurer in the past before taking the seat of Guild Master. His fame rose during that era when he fought many strong opponents, and many of them were powerful devils.

That was only the Guild Master's personal power, not even counting the power of the Adventurer Guild as a whole. They possessed deep foundations and connections that allowed them to stand for a long time.

If those nobles still chose violence, it would turn into an ugly battle that would cost them greatly. Those nobles were powerful, but their influence was only strong within their own kingdoms. It was different from the Adventurer Guild, whose reach spread across the entire continent.

-----

In Gerisa City of the Martal Empire, the capital city of the Seigerfield Dukedom, the duke himself was already reading the report regarding the Guild Master of the Adventurer Guild.

The middle-aged man with blonde hair and a strong stature smiled as he rolled up the scroll in his hand and placed it on the table beside him.

"It looks like Brother Alfred has made his move. Well, Zander must have already asked for his help," he said.

Near him was a beautiful woman with long blonde hair, and she also showed a smile. She was his wife, Evina Seigerfield.

"That is expected. The first thing on Zander's mind must have been asking help from the guild he belonged to. Still, I feel it is quite disappointing that Zander went to Brother Alfred instead of us. If only he had come to us, we would have helped him," she released a sigh.

"If not for the fact that we do not know how Aldrian the Great would react, we would have already helped Zander the moment he was pursued by those people."

Duke Seigerfield nodded. "Well, it looks like it is Brother Alfred's fortune, as it has attracted much attention and Aldrian the Great will hear about it." Then he smiled.

"But we are not truly without gain. At least we can see that our daughter is very close to Zander."

His wife nodded. "I never saw Evalina pay attention to a man the way she does toward Zander. At least that is a good sign for us, and the man she has set her sights on is more than worthy of her."

Duke Seigerfield kept his smile. "If they can develop their relationship to a more intimate level, then that would be the best result we could get. She would have a strong cultivator as her husband, and we would also gain an indirect connection to Aldrian the Great."

Duke Seigerfield crossed his arms.

"Anyway, this matter will be blown to a much larger scale than it was supposed to be because of Brother Alfred's announcement. I know that His Majesty will undoubtedly learn about the matter regarding Zander, and I can imagine that he will do something behind the scenes to help Zander," he said.

"I hope that those nobles of the Valhemin Kingdom know when to step back and forget about their vengeance."

-----

As the announcement had already spread and many people were talking about it, the atmosphere surrounding Marquess Lored was extremely bad at this moment.

He was sitting inside his private room, clenching his fist as his expression contorted with fury. The report he had received made him want to explode in rage and storm to the place where Zander was to kill him.

When he thought that he had almost caught him, he suddenly received this kind of warning from the Adventurer Guild Master. He also had not received any report from the group of Dark Vipers tasked with capturing Zander and his friend.

He felt truly furious, as when he thought that everything would succeed, he was met with the opposite result.

What was happening behind the scenes? Why was the Adventurer Guild Master suddenly supporting Zander?

As he was thinking, suddenly the door of the room opened, and an old man walked in.

The moment Marquess Lored saw him, he raised his eyebrows.

"Father?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 925 - 925: The Visit from the Royal Family

[ 1,551 words ]

"Father." Marquess Lored said in surprise.

An old man with a white beard covering his entire lower jaw and fierce looks rushed toward him. This was the former patriarch and the strongest cultivator of the Marquess Lored household, Bazan Lored, who possessed cultivation at low pseudo immortal stage.

From his expression at this moment, Marquess Lored knew that his father was not amused, and he knew why.

"I decided to help you at this moment because this situation is getting out of hand. If that man becomes involved, then I will have to use another card to fight him," the old man said. His words made Marquess Lored widen his eyes, and his expression turned ecstatic.

"Thank you, Father. I apologize for my inadequacy in solving this problem. I truly did not expect the guild master of the Adventurer Guild to involve himself like this," he said as he stood up.

The old man, Bazan, nodded. "Neither of us expected Alfred to make a move, so I am also surprised. However, this is not entirely a dead end for us. I still have something that could help us get revenge for Freiz's killer."

"May I know what it is that you can rely on in this situation, Father?" Marquess Lored asked.

The old man smiled. "I have one favor that I can ask from the royal family because of my past service. I will ask for their protection against the Adventurer Guild's pressure. While we are under the direct protection of the royal family, you will continue hunting that bastard. I also approve you to use the treasures in our secret vault, so the Dark Vipers can send pseudo immortal stage assassins to hunt him," the old man replied.

Marquess Lored was truly ecstatic. If they could bring the royal family into this, then it was much better. No matter how powerful the Adventurer Guild was, it could not oppose the royal family within their own kingdom. As the ruler of the nation, the royal family was the most powerful force, one that even the Adventurer Guild could not ignore.

In addition, being able to use more treasures to persuade the Dark Vipers to send stronger cultivators would make the mission easier, and even ensure a hundred percent success.

"Then I will contact the Dark Vipers to negotiate with them to send even one of their strongest assassins," Marquess Lored said.

"Go. We must not let the killer of our family's descendant go unpunished. Let this be a lesson to everyone that our family cannot be underestimated," the old man said.

Marquess Lored then walked toward the door, intending to contact the Dark Vipers.

However, before he could step out of the room, the door opened, revealing the panicked expression of his butler. He frowned when he saw his butler like this.

"What happened? Why are you—"

"My lord, they are here," his butler cut him off, which made both the marquess and the old man confused.

"Who are they? Make it clear!" the marquess shouted in frustration. Looking at his butler's expression, he suddenly had a bad feeling.

"The royal family. They are almost reaching the mansion. The envoy is led by Her Highness, Princess Ravilla," the butler said, which made both the marquess and the old man widen their eyes in shock.

"What? A royal envoy led by Princess Ravilla? What is their purpose here?" Marquess Lored asked.

"We do not know, my lord, but judging from the convoy following her, it does not seem good. She brought her knight order, and General Rigalis is also among them," the butler replied.

Hearing that, both the marquess and the old man felt that something was wrong. Why would the princess bring her knight order and even one of the most powerful generals of the royal family? Their formation truly looked like they were heading into a great battle.

"Maybe they came to give support, Father?" Marquess Lored said. "Didn't Father say that you could ask one favor from the royal family? Maybe even before you asked them, they sent their envoy in this manner to show their support?"

The old man looked at him for a moment. "Perhaps. But let us confirm it first. We will meet them personally," he said as he stepped out of the room to prepare to greet the royal envoy.

Marquess Lored followed closely behind his father.

-----

Not far from Marquess Lored's mansion, on one of the main streets of the city, people looked toward a line of knights led by a beautiful woman at the front. The people who saw the woman and the line of knights knew who she was and recognized the knight order by the symbol on their armor.

The woman's long black hair was tied in a ponytail, making her look graceful, and everyone could clearly see her face. She wore knight armor that accentuated her body's curves, which only added to her charm.

Behind her was a middle-aged man with an intimidating presence. Although he did not release any aura, people felt deterred just by looking at him, as his stature appeared powerful and firm. He was also a famous figure in the kingdom, so many recognized him at once.

However, a question soon arose in their minds.

Why was the royal family coming here? Why did they arrive in such an exaggerated manner?

"Is it because of the matter between Marquess Lored and Zorzal? Does the royal family want to support Marquess Lored?" one of the onlookers commented.

"Maybe so. I do not see any other reason for the royal family to send such a force into the marquess's territory," another replied.

"But wouldn't this cause the problem to become much larger than it should be? It might drag two nations into this trouble. I do not want to invite conflict with the Martal Empire for the sake of the Lored family," someone else said.

The spark of discussion spread everywhere, but the princess and her troops ignored it. They continued marching in formation until they finally arrived at the Marquess Lored mansion, where Marquess Lored and his father were already standing in front of the main doors.

The line of the family's cultivators was already prepared as a guard of honor on both sides of the path leading to the mansion's entrance.

"Welcome to the Lored family's mansion, Your Highness. It is truly a surprise that you would come at this moment, and my apologies that I have not prepared much," Marquess Lored said as the princess approached him.

The princess did not show much expression and simply nodded. "No problem, Marquess Lored. I came here on behalf of His Majesty, the king. This was a sudden order, so I did not expect any special preparation. I am here only to convey what His Majesty instructed me to say, so that Marquess Lored may hear it directly. I would like a private room so we can talk about it."

Marquess Lored nodded. "I see. Then please follow me."

After that, the princess entered the mansion, followed by General Rigalis. As for the rest of the knights, they remained standing in neat lines outside the mansion. They did not speak and did not move, which greatly intimidated the onlookers.

Inside the mansion, the princess was brought to the marquess's study, where she was served hot tea. After everyone settled down, the marquess finally asked the question he had been holding back.

"My apologies, Your Highness, but what does His Majesty wish to convey to me, for him to send Your Highness here personally?" He truly hoped that the royal family would say they would support his family in the matter involving the Adventurer Guild.

He truly hoped so...

"I will be direct, Marquess Lored. His Majesty has ordered you to stop the hunt for the man named Zorzal, withdraw all of your manpower completely, and call off any tasks given to third parties to hunt him," the princess said without hesitation, her expression calm.

Hearing this, Marquess Lored felt his heart stop as his hope suddenly shattered. A chill ran through his body, and he felt as if he could not breathe. His burning rage and spirit of vengeance were doused by the cold water of reality.

"What?" he could not help but blurt out.

The princess repeated herself, this time with more pressure in her voice. "Stop your hunt for the man named Zorzal. Cease all efforts to search for him or make any contact with him. You will forget everything regarding your conflict with him and let bygones be bygones."

The old man sitting beside Marquess Lored was barely holding back his fury. His face had already turned red, and veins bulged on his forehead. His aura began to leak out as he struggled to restrain himself.

"May I know why His Majesty ordered us to do this? We are the ones who are supposed to be the victims, because that man killed my grandchild. We have lost our most promising descendant, Your Highness. Why is His Majesty protecting him instead of

supporting us, his subjects? Why, Your Highness?" the old man said, his expression filled with a sense of betrayal.

"How am I supposed to forget this grievance if the royal family is blocking our efforts to seek justice for our descendant?" he added.

Princess Rivallia, with General Rigalis standing behind her, did not change their expression. Instead, she took out an information crystal and handed it to the old man.

"Maybe this will be enough for you to forget your grievance," she said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 926 - 926: Serious Threat

[ 1,596 words ]

Bazan looked at the information crystal with confusion before he took it from the princess's hand. After that, he injected his energy into it to see what the information contained. The moment his mind entered the content of the crystal, his body trembled because what he saw was the king himself.

King Frederick sat on his throne, looking at him as if Bazan had already committed an unforgivable crime. From his expression alone, it seemed as though he wanted to strangle him to death with his own hands.

"To Marquess Lored, or perhaps former Patriarch Bazan who is watching this recording, listen to me carefully. I want all of you to stop bothering Zorzal. I repeat it again, stop bothering that man. Stop your search. Stop your hunt. Stop every activity that has any connection to him. This is an imperial decree, and if you rebel against my order, then your family will be punished according to the imperial rules."

Then King Frederick's eyes turned sharper, and he changed his posture into a more serious stance.

"No. I will personally come to you, to your family, and I will make sure your entire family is buried along with you. No one will be able to save you, and you will never escape. I swear to the heavens that I will make sure you are completely destroyed. Do you hear me?! If I receive even a single report that you are still doing what you are doing right now, then you are done for!"

He spoke with a fierce expression that showed his fury, as if the person looking at him at this very moment was his mortal enemy.

"I also want your family to apologize to Zorzal. Use the most sincere words toward him. Make him understand that you truly regret trying to harm him. That is all."

After that, the recording stopped.

Bazan could only freeze as sweat rolled down his forehead. His furious expression and anger completely disappeared, replaced by fear in his eyes. His face turned pale, and his body grew cold.

Looking at his reaction, Marquess Lored decided to take the information crystal from his father's hand, which already looked weak, and examine its contents. After seeing what was inside, the marquess's reaction was the same as his father's. His face turned pale, and he froze.

Princess Ravilla did not change her expression. Instead, she stood up and took the information crystal from the marquess's hand.

"I am already done here, so please think carefully about what you are going to do in the future. I hope you choose a wise decision, for we do not want a bloodbath and do not wish for our kingdom to lose one of its nobles," she said.

"You do not have to escort me outside. Good afternoon."

She then left the room, followed by General Rigalis.

After both father and son were left alone in the room, the silence lingered for a few seconds. They could only lower their heads and clench their fists and teeth in fury. But then Bazan loosened his fist and took a deep breath. His face seemed more aged and even looked tired.

"We have to abort all of our plans. Forget about revenge," he said.

Marquess Lored looked at his father with a reluctant expression.

"But Father—"

"Do you not see His Majesty's warning?! His Majesty is someone who will do what he says, and he was truly serious just now. With that kind of expression, he really will come to us personally and destroy our family entirely. Do you really want to bring this family down?!" Bazan shouted, making Marquess Lored tremble.

He gritted his teeth and lowered his head again.

"What the hell is happening? Why did the royal family choose to protect that nobody? I thought we could depend on them," he said.

Bazan also felt confused by this. Was it because of the Adventurer Guild's influence? He doubted it. There was no way the Adventurer Guild could move the king so easily, let alone make him look that furious.

At this moment, Bazan finally sensed that they had missed something, something regarding that man with the identity of Zorzal. If the king could not be moved by the Adventurer Guild, then the reason the royal family had meddled in this matter was because of Zorzal himself.

They clearly did not fully understand who this Zorzal was.

After thinking it through, Bazan released a sigh and looked at his son.

"The survival of the family is the most important thing. Descendants can be created again, but once a family falls, there is no turning back. I will not let a family that has stood for generations fall as long as I live. We will forget anything regarding that Zorzal."

He then stood up and walked out of the room.

The marquess gritted his teeth and clenched his fist. His face was filled with reluctance, but then he leaned against the sofa, showing a blank expression. He covered his face with both of his hands.

"I'm sorry, son."

-----

On the street, Princess Ravilla walked toward the warp gate plaza, as she still needed to continue her journey to the other two noble families and convey the same message to them.

As she walked with her knights, General Rigalis behind her suddenly spoke.

"Your Highness, may I know what was inside the information crystal that made them turn pale and freeze in fear like that?"

Princess Ravilla smiled slightly when she heard that. "A warning from Father, and it is truly a threat that will be engraved in their minds for a long time. I rarely see Father become that angry, and I think that if not for his generosity, he would have likely stormed this place personally a few hours ago and destroyed the entire Lored family."

General Rigalis raised his eyebrows before nodding in understanding.

"I see. Then that is truly terrifying. Facing His Majesty's fury would shake anyone's soul. Even I would not want to face His Majesty's wrath."

"Well, Father has to take this seriously. This matter involves Aldrian the Great after all. Father does not want any mishap or problem to arise between him, this kingdom, and Aldrian the Great. The consequences would be devastating if something were to go wrong between us and Aldrian the Great," the princess said.

What she did not say was that King Frederick was also furious because he had learned too late that Aldrian's disciple was on the Orian Continent. He had only found out today after Emperor Rozwald informed him.

In the past, he had only known about the incident in Sword Emperor Jitian's tomb, but he had never thought that Zorzal was actually Zander.

It was not only because the Adventurer Guild had kept the identity hidden, but also because he himself had not dug deeper to investigate Zorzal's background. King Frederick had simply thought that Zorzal was a powerful adventurer and a fortunate individual who had obtained the inheritance of Sword Emperor Jitian.

But everything changed the moment he heard the Adventurer Guild Master's announcement, which made him become more interested in Zorzal's background. However, after he suddenly received communication from Emperor Rozwald that Zorzal was actually Zander, he exploded in fury.

His fury was directed not only toward the nobles of his kingdom but also toward himself. He felt deep regret. How could he be so careless and not know Zorzal's true origin? How could he allow those nobles to do such things to Aldrian the Great's disciple?

He quickly tried to fix the problem by stopping those nobles from causing further harm to Zander. He was truly serious and went to extremes to make sure that Zander could live in peace on this continent.

Sending his daughter along with her knight order and one of the strongest generals was enough to show how dire the situation was. This was also a show of force, meant to ensure that those nobles would not make any foolish decisions.

Hearing the princess's words, General Rigalis became serious, then let out a sigh.

"Well, that is true. But to think that Aldrian the Great's disciple is adventuring on this continent and even taking the identity of an adventurer... Is he here to train?"

Princess Ravilla shrugged. "Maybe. But whatever the reason, we have to make sure that our kingdom does not give him any trouble. We should even help him if we can."

General Rigalis nodded. They continued their journey toward the other two noble families, carrying the same message, or rather, the same threat from King Frederick.

-----

At night, Zander was visited by several figures who made him happy. They were all his friends from his adventurer group.

They had come after hearing about the Guild Master's announcement. Especially for two of them, they visited only after the Adventurer Guild had ensured their safety.

They gathered in a private room of a nearby restaurant, where they could be seen sharing their happy moments.

"Do you know how shocked I was when I heard that the Guild Master announced he was supporting you? After all these months, I had lost any contact or news about you. Then suddenly your name appeared, and it caused a sensation everywhere," the young man with short blue hair said.

"I immediately departed to look for you, and I finally asked Evalina's family about your whereabouts. You are truly a lucky bastard for the Guild Master to be willing to help you," he added.

He came from one of the noble households and had the same status as Evalina, as his parent were also duke of the Martal Empire.

He was the young master of House Florendina, Edward Florendina, also known as Edwin under his adventurer name.

"Well, many things happened, but luckily the Guild Master was willing to help me," Zander said with smile.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 927 - 927: Zander's Friends**

[ 1,518 words ]

"Just like Brother Edwin said, you are truly lucky. But Because of that, I am also lucky, because I was saved by the people of the Adventurer Guild. I thought I was already doomed at that time, as the Dark Vipers almost got me," Valik said after sighing in relief.

"I was still hiding when the Dark Vipers seemed to sniff the place where I hid. At that time, suddenly, a member of the guild came to me and brought me to the guild's branch building. Do you know how shocked I was when someone from the guild suddenly came to me and asked me to follow him to the branch building?" Froz said.

Froz was a woman with long black hair and a slim body. Just like Valik, she came from a common background, but she was one of the geniuses who could comprehend ice laws and two other laws, which made her special compared to most cultivators.

Zander smiled. "Well, I'm glad that the two of you arrived here safely. I was truly relieved once I heard that you were safe, you know?"

The others smiled toward him. At this moment, at a table full of feasts where Zander, Evalina, Edward, Valik, and Froz were gathered, they felt complete again after months of separation. They were like this back when they were together on their adventurer group missions, and because of that, they built a strong bond.

Despite two of them coming from noble families, there seemed to be no line separating them. They interacted as if all of them were equal. This was also thanks to Evalina's and Edward's families, who supported their descendants in becoming adventurers and forming bonds with commoners.

As they kept talking while feasting on the food, Edward looked at Zander with narrowed eyes.

"Still, I wonder why the Guild Master decided to help you. I never heard of the Guild Master going this far, even when guild members fall into trouble with nobles. How did you persuade him?" he asked.

Zander shook his head. "I really don't know what is inside the Guild Master's mind. I'm confused myself. Even when I tried to use the inheritance of Sword Emperor Jitian as compensation, the Guild Master refused it. It's as if he did it purely out of generosity. You can ask Claire if you don't believe me. She was beside me when I asked the Guild Master for help."

Edward bit into another piece of meat, then pondered something after hearing Zander's answer. He looked at Zander as he swallowed the meat. Then he smiled and opened his lips.

"Well, that's it, we finally got a clue about this man's true background."

Hearing that, the others raised their eyebrows, while Zander's heartbeat quickened.

'Did he catch something from just our conversation? I don't think I leaked anything,' Zander thought. Among their group, he was the only one who had not revealed his true background.

As part of his training, he had to depend on his own identity and strength on this continent.

That was why, when his friends asked where he came from, he only replied that he was a vagabond cultivator and did not clearly explain his birthplace.

As time passed, another reason emerged for why he did not tell them the truth. He was afraid that the way they acted toward him would change.

He liked finally being able to make friends after such a long time without having any at the academy. He also truly did not have any friends on the Barisan Continent, as he spent most of his time training and cultivating. The only person closest to him, whom he could consider a friend, was Kang Yongjin.

However, Kang Yongjin could not truly be called a friend and was more like a rival. They did not share moments that could be counted as friendship. Instead, they shared many moments as rivals.

If the friends he made on this continent learned that he had someone like Aldrian the Great as his master, he was afraid that they would distance themselves from him. They would hesitate to act normally, thinking that it would be inappropriate. He did not want something like that to happen when he had finally found people he could spend time with as friends.

However, he knew that his friends had already been suspicious about his background for a long time, but they chose not to press him about it. He knew that someday, the truth would come out.

"What clue did you get, Brother Edwin?" Evalina asked, which made Edward look at her with a teasing smile.

"Ish, ish. When the matter is related to Brother Zorzal, you seem quite enthusiastic."

"No, no, I..." she said in panic as she glanced at Zander quickly before turning her head away.

Zander could only awkwardly look away while scratching his cheek. Still, he also wondered what Edward was going to say.

"Alright, alright, I'm just joking. But let's continue. At least we know that Zorzal's background is not normal, because there is no way the Guild Master would help a nobody. He might come from a noble family or have someone with great backing."

Hearing that, the others did not think much further and agreed with the statement. For them, Zander's background was the most mysterious among all of them.

With the Guild Master's help, it at least showed them that Zander was special. They doubted that this was only because of his ability or talent.

Although Zander was powerful and a rare genius, that still did not guarantee the Guild Master helping him. There had to be something else they did not know but the Guild Master did, and that might be Zander's background.

"Then do you know who he is or who his backing is?" Valik asked as he glanced at Zander with a slight smirk. Zander also felt nervous as he waited for Edward's reply.

"Well, as far as I know, the only way for the Guild Master to do something outside of his normal behavior is if His Majesty the Emperor ordered him directly. Besides that, I don't see how the Guild Master would act willingly. That is also a sign that Zorzal might have a connection to the imperial family, and it could be quite close," Edward said, which made Zander inwardly sigh in relief.

His guess was far off from the truth.

"Is my guess correct?" Edward added, which made Zander smile and wave his hand.

"No, I don't have any connection to the imperial family whatsoever. Like I said, I'm just a vagabond cultivator. How could I have any connection with such an esteemed family? If I had that kind of connection, I would not have been escaping all this time while being pursued by those nobles."

Edward smacked his lips as he looked at Zander's expression, which did not hesitate to rebut him. From that reaction, it seemed that his guess was wrong. Moreover, what Zander said was also reasonable.

But then, he smiled again.

"I see, then..." He seemed to have an answer, which the others waited for as all of them looked in his direction. After a few moments of suspense—

"I don't know. There is nothing that comes to my mind," Edward said, which made Valik smack his lips and the two women show disappointed expressions.

"All that suspense was for nothing. I regret taking you seriously," Valik said as he then took another bite of his food.

Edward was still smiling. "Well, who said that I know about his background? I only talked about the clue, right?"

The others ignored him and continued with their food, while Zander once again sighed inwardly in relief. He also continued to eat his food.

"Well, no matter where he came from, he is our friend and has already become one of us, so I don't care where he came from," Evalina suddenly said, which made the others look at her. Zander's face slightly flushed as he tried to hide it by continuing to eat.

Evalina realized what she had said, quickly looked to the other side while she also bit into another piece of meat.

Everyone smiled as they looked at her, but then Valik spoke. "Claire is correct. No matter where Zorzal came from, he is still one of us. It doesn't change a thing. The most important thing is that we can gather like this in harmony."

"I agree," Froz said before she took another bite.

"Agree. Well, I just wanted to play around and take a guess earlier, so just forget it," Edward said as he also took another bite of his food.

Looking at their reactions and hearing their words, Zander felt warmth in his heart. He was glad that he had returned to the Orian continent to meet them and to solve his problems.

For the rest of the dinner, they talked about many things. They had been separated for months, so there were many stories they could share with each other.

The atmosphere was truly joyous as the five friends conversed and joked with each other without worrying about anything. Their hearts were at ease, and they thought only about happy things. This was very different from some people in other parts of the continent, who could only hold onto their fury without being able to unleash it.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 928 - 928: From a Far Star Cluster**

[ 1,432 words ]

On the next day, an announcement was made by the three noble families that had animosity against Zander, stating that they were in the wrong and that they apologized for bothering him. The announcement spread to many places across the continent, and it finally reached Zander himself.

Once he heard it, he could not help but feel surprised because the result was much better than he had initially thought. He never expected those nobles to apologize to him because he knew what kind of pride those families possessed.

For him, making those families back off and deterring them from acting was enough. He could look for a way to entirely solve the problem with the nobles at later date, when he had already grown stronger.

Was the Adventurer Guild powerful enough to make all those nobles in a faraway kingdom show this kind of apology? Or was this some kind of plot by those nobles?

He did not know.

But whatever the case, he was glad that the problem, for now, had been solved, at least on the surface. But He needed to wait a little longer to make sure that those families truly meant what they were saying.

As Zander thought about the current situation, he suddenly thought of another piece of news that had spread today. He heard that the Avilandis imperial family was conducting a large-scale hunting operation against the Dark Vipers members within their empire. The imperial family was truly serious in their actions against the Dark Vipers, deploying many of the imperial armies.

Strong cultivators of the imperial family spread out to hunt the Dark Vipers members, which made many people wonder what had happened between the imperial family and the Dark Vipers.

They had never seen the imperial family send so many of their cultivators to hunt the Dark Vipers before, so why now?

Zander knew that the Dark Vipers were one organization that pursued his friends.

'Does this have something to do with my problem?' he thought. The timing was coincidentally perfect. His friends were almost caught by those people, and just yesterday he had asked for help from the guild master, and then today something like this happened. It was as if what happened was one of the results of him asking for help.

He did not know what was really happening, but he was relieved that, one by one, the threats against him and his friends were being taken care of.

-----

In the Aster Empire, in Aldrian's palace, Aldrian himself sat on his throne as he spread his domain sense across the Orian Continent. He was observing how Zander was doing and the things that were happening on the continent, and he could not help but smile.

'Well, it looks like I'll need to invite Emperor Rozwald and King Frederick for a drink in the future,' he thought.

In the end, because they realized who Zander was, they decided to help him in their own way. Aldrian sighed, because even if Zander hid his identity, at the end of the day he still had weaknesses that made him recognizable to some people on the Orian Continent.

Moreover, many had already seen Zander in the grand tournament, so Aldrian did not doubt that they could somehow see through Zander's disguise. All of that hiding was useless against those powerhouses who had already seen him in the tournament, and it certainly reduced the "reality effect" of his training in the Orian Continent.

They would likely help Zander to make his life easier. Unless he told those leaders to not actively help Zander, then the situation would likely be the same in the future if Zander fell into trouble again.

'It looks like Zander needs to go to a place where no one could recognize him,' Aldrian thought with a smile.

While he was still thinking about his disciple, he received another incoming communication from the Xin family elder about guests who wished to visit. Not long after, a group of five humans entered the throne hall, three men and two women.

They were wearing red-black robes with an insignia that he had never seen before. The strongest among them was a middle-aged man and a woman at the high pseudo-immortal stage, while the rest were at the low pseudo-immortal stage. This was quite an exaggerated composition if they were only envoys of some power.

As the group neared him, they bowed.

"We greet the great Emperor, Aldrian the Great," the strongest of them said with full respect.

Aldrian nodded. "Well, I have to say that I am slightly surprised by a group that consists entirely of pseudo-immortal stage cultivators visiting me."

"My apologies, Your Majesty, but this is our way of expressing our sincerity and showing the seriousness of our visit. Please allow me to introduce myself first. My name is Geodard Alfemin, the patriarch of the Alfemin family from the Blue Pearl World of the White Ring Star Cluster," the man said.

"White Ring Star Cluster? You came from quite a distant place. You are the first ones to come from that star cluster. I hope that you find my empire to your liking," Aldrian said.

He knew that the White Ring Star Cluster was located much farther away than the four cardinal direction star clusters, around five months of travel from the Ancient Blue Gate World.

It was one of the star clusters that rarely had connections to the central star cluster, even more so to the Ancient Blue Gate World, so the visit of this group was truly a surprise to Aldrian.

Although he had already received many guests from other star clusters, this one was the farthest so far.

"Of course, Your Majesty. There is nothing that made us dislike Your Majesty's great empire. In fact, we really like it, and our visit here is not only to greet Your Majesty, but also regarding something else, and it has something to do with this continent," Patriarch Geodard said.

Aldrian smiled, feeling curious. "Oh? What is it, Patriarch Geodard? Now I am intrigued."

"We would like to move our entire family to the Aster Empire, Your Majesty," Patriarch Geodard replied.

Hearing that, Aldrian slightly raised his eyebrows. "Move your entire family here? Why? For the record, you are not the only one who wants to move their family to this continent. Of course, I am open to anyone who wishes to move to this empire, as long as they can adapt to my rule and do not create disharmony."

"Well, I know it may not sound convincing, but we plan to move to this continent to fulfill a prophecy that has been passed down from our ancestors, Your Majesty," Patriarch Geodard said.

"A prophecy?" Aldrian asked curiously.

Patriarch Geodard nodded. "Yes, a prophecy. Our family is a long-standing one that has existed for millions of years, and this prophecy seems to have originated not long after the establishment of our family."

"From our records, our first ancestor encountered a great difficulty. After that, he met a wandering Buddhist monk. This strange monk helped our ancestor resolve his problem, but he also gave him a prophecy that we still hold to this day."

Hearing that, Aldrian became truly curious.

"A strange monk, you say?" he asked, and Patriarch Geodard responded with a nod.

"Yes, Your Majesty. There is even a picture depicting that monk's face in our secret vault, which has existed since the time of our first ancestor. Because our ancestor deeply respected that monk, he made a picture of him and hung it in the secret vault."

Aldrian thought for a moment. He suddenly felt intrigued by this monk, and he decided to ask the patriarch, "Could I take a look at that monk's picture? I am suddenly intrigued by this monk in your story."

"Ah, my apologies, Your Majesty, but I did not bring the picture with me. However, I can recreate the monk's image like this..." Patriarch Geodard said as he drew in the air with his index finger, using his energy. The process was fast, and with his precise and refined control of energy, he shaped his energy into a picture of a face floating in the air.

When he finished and Aldrian looked at the face, he was quite astonished because...

'Isn't that Tianlian? He met their ancestor?' Aldrian thought.

The face undoubtedly depicted Tianlian Buddha.

"This is the monk who gave the prophecy," Patriarch Geodard said. The manifested image held for a few seconds before disappearing.

"And his prophecy for our family is like this: 'There will be a time when the red evils close in on your family. Keep holding on until the evils of the Northern Star are swept away by the brightest light. Stay near the light and follow it. Your family will be safe and reach glory.'"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 929 - 929: The Problem of the Blue Pearl World**

[ 1,562 words ]

'There will be a time when the red evils close in on your family. Keep holding on until the evils of the Northern Star are swept away by the brightest light. Stay near the light and follow it. Your family will be safe and reach glory.' Aldrian thought, repeating what Patriarch Geodard had said.

From the style of the prophecy, he did not doubt that it came from his followers, as they sometimes referred to him as the light or the brightest star. He thought that the evils of the Northern Star were referring to the devils in the Northern Star Cluster.

"The evils of the Northern Star are swept away by the brightest light" must be referring to the war in the Northern Star Cluster, where the alliance forces successfully liberated the entire cluster.

"I see. So this family wants to fulfill the last part of the prophecy, stay near the light and follow it. They simply interpret it as moving all of their family members near the light, which is me."

However, Aldrian caught a piece of information from the prophecy that made him understand something. Before he asked the patriarch about it, he decided to question him about another matter first.

"I see. Then why do you think that prophecy has anything to do with this continent? There is nothing in the prophecy that points toward this place at all."

Patriarch Geodard nodded as he replied to Aldrian's question.

"Well, the red evils here have already been agreed upon by many of our elders and ancestors as referring to the devils. There is no doubt about that. However, for some parts of the prophecy, there was still uncertainty until recently, when we heard about the liberation of the Northern Star Cluster."

"The evils of the Northern Star being swept away obviously refer to the devils that disappeared from the Northern Star Cluster. They lost to Your Majesty's alliance forces. There are some guesses about the interpretation of the brightest light, but most of us believe that the brightest light might refer to this empire or to Your Majesty yourself. The name 'Aster,' which means star, is the clue that made us believe so. Light and stars are connected, after all."

"So we interpret it like this: if there comes a time when the devils disappear from the Northern Star Cluster, then we move to the Aster Empire, and we could reach our glory. Well, something like that." Patriarch Geodard then paused.

Aldrian nodded, but then he smiled. "I see, but I think you still have not told me the complete meaning of the prophecy."

Patriarch Geodard was stunned, but before he could speak, Aldrian already continued. "Let me guess. The red evils that are closing in on your family might mean that, at this time, your family is facing problems with the devils in your world, and it might be a big enough problem for you to consider migrating to another world."

Hearing that, the entire group of the Alfemin family widened their eyes in surprise. But Aldrian did not stop.

"Then regarding following the light, were you planning to bring this up later, after telling me about your circumstances in your own world, Patriarch? Well, I suppose this is more like one of your intentions besides migrating your entire family to this continent." Aldrian paused slightly as he showed a smile.

"Please tell me, Patriarch, is my guess correct? If not, then just consider it my arrogance for speaking nonsense, and for that, I will apologize."

There was only silence from the group. But then Patriarch Geodard sighed. "As expected of Your Majesty. Even I felt goosebumps that Your Majesty could guess as far as that. Yes, what Your Majesty said is correct. I would like to tell Your Majesty about the circumstances that made me believe this prophecy is truly depicting our current situation, and later, I will have a request for Your Majesty regarding this matter."

Aldrian nodded. "Then let us hear about your family's circumstances first. This must be the biggest factor that made you decide to migrate to my empire."

The patriarch nodded. "Correct, Your Majesty. The reason we began thinking about leaving our world is the situation there. The situation in our world, the Blue Pearl World, is quite dire, with the devils having already occupied more than half of it. We have already lost many people, and the devils' numbers seem endless, as they keep receiving reinforcements from devils coming from other star clusters."

"We are overwhelmed, and as the years pass, we are being pushed back more and more. Moreover, the situation has worsened because the devils have many tricks up their sleeves, which led us to fall into our current state." Patriarch Geodard sighed.

"Support from other worlds is also limited, as they only think about themselves. Our choices are limited, and we know that it is only a matter of time before the devils completely occupy our world. There is no other outcome at the current moment."

"With the prophecy as a clue and the direction we have to take, we decided to plan our way out to minimize the deaths of our people and others. We need to start a large-scale evacuation."

"We know that, with the size of our family and the many people who will follow us, it will create a large surge of people entering Your Majesty's empire, and we would like to compensate Your Majesty for it." Patriarch Geodard took a deep breath.

"We will give ourselves to you in exchange for the safety of the many people of my world. In other words, we, the Alfemin family, would like to serve under you, just as the prophecy says, to follow the light. All of our treasures and souls are at Your Majesty's command." Patriarch Geodard then lowered his body.

"I hope that Your Majesty can consider what I have just said and help me, my family, and the many other people of my world." The others in the patriarch's group also followed, lowering their bodies to Aldrian.

Aldrian did not answer them immediately. Instead, he looked at their bowing figures. He seemed to be pondering something, while the others waited for Aldrian's answer with hope and tension.

After a few moments of silence, Aldrian finally opened his lips.

"Thinking of the safety of so many people, what a good leader you are. However, after thinking it through thoroughly, I believe you don't have to leave your world."

Hearing that, Patriarch Geodard felt his chest turn cold. He thought that Aldrian had rejected his proposal and refused to take them in, which filled him with despair. However, before he could sink deeper into disappointment, he heard Aldrian continue.

"That is because I will help you defend your world from the devils, so you don't have to move your people away from the world you call home."

Hearing that, the members of the Alfemin family straightened their bodies as their eyes widened in shock.

"What?" Patriarch Geodard instinctively blurted out.

Aldrian smiled as he nodded. "You heard me correctly. I will help you defend your world from the devils, so you don't have to leave your world."

"I have several considerations as to why you don't need to migrate here. The first, of course, is the populace. If you want to migrate as many people as possible, you would undoubtedly leave a number of people behind because of the limited space on interstellar vessels. You would need to sacrifice many people."

"Secondly, I don't think the devils will allow you to evacuate many people. Once they see you doing that, they will try their best to kill as many as possible. It would create a bloodbath."

"Thirdly, well, let's just say that this is my personal problem with the devils. I simply want to kill as many of them as possible, so eradicating all of the devils in your world would be my personal mission."

After making sure that he had not heard it wrong, Patriarch Geodard's eyes began to glimmer, and his expression turned to one of ecstasy and relief. The others felt the same, which made them bow once again.

"If Your Majesty helps us defend our world, then it will be our greatest fortune."  
However, the patriarch then lifted his head, his expression turning to one of guilt.

"But I am afraid it will cause Your Majesty great trouble, as you would have to send troops to a war that is not even in Your Majesty's people's interests. It might create a rift between Your Majesty and your subjects."

Aldrian could not help but smile upon hearing that.

"That would be true for other empires, but I don't think my people would have a problem with me fighting another war in the distant stars against the devils. If I say that I will go to war and want to bring troops, then there will be many who will voluntarily follow me."

Patriarch Geodard raised his eyebrows at Aldrian's confidence. However, he soon understood. After staying on this continent for some time, he had learned how the people here truly revered and idolized their emperor. Many even considered him their god.

Perhaps that was why Aldrian was so confident in his subjects' loyalty and unity, no matter what he ordered them to do.

"And who says that I need to bring troops to help you defend your world?" Aldrian continued, which left the others confused. However, Patriarch Geodard soon understood what Aldrian meant.

He was truly shocked, his lips trembling

"That means...?"

Aldrian nodded. "I alone am enough."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 930 - 930: Helping Them**

[ 1,455 words ]

"I alone am enough," Aldrian said with full confidence.

Patriarch Geodard and his group, upon hearing his words, felt their hearts tremble. The patriarch looked at Aldrian in astonishment, and he could not help but think how arrogant Aldrian sounded.

As long as he had lived, he had never heard someone speak so confidently, claiming that their presence alone was enough to resolve a war on a scale that affected the entire world.

He was truly speechless. He had already heard of how great Aldrian was, yet with every story he heard, it became increasingly absurd, to the point that he no longer knew whether those stories were merely made up or straight out of a fairytale.

However, with so many people saying the same thing, and with countless witnesses, many of whom were powerhouses of this world, he had no choice but to accept it as a fact.

Still, because he had never seen Aldrian in action himself, there remained a small doubt in his heart. Could a mortal really accomplish all of that? From his perspective, such feats were something an immortal might be able to do, or a god.

'Is that why so many people regard him as their god?' Patriarch Geodard thought.

Aldrian, looking at the speechless figures before him, felt amused. He knew that they still harbored doubts in their hearts regarding his abilities, but he did not blame them. His strength and abilities were indeed absurd, to the point that no cultivator, even in the past, could compare to him.

After a few seconds of silence, Patriarch Geodard cleared his throat.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, for showing such a reaction, but are you sure? You alone are enough?" he asked.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. "I am sure. I do not need to trouble my troops for this war. They only returned from a major war not long ago, and the scale of a single world is enough for me alone."

Patriarch Geodard gulped as he looked at Aldrian. He could clearly see how serious and confident Aldrian was. Looking at him like this, he could not help but feel confident as well. Although he still harbored a small doubt in his heart, he felt optimistic knowing that Aldrian would help them directly.

"I see, but is Your Majesty certain you can afford such a long journey with all the matters you must handle here? Traveling back and forth to our world alone would take at least a year when accounting for the time flow of this world. This does not even include how long Your Majesty might stay in our world," the patriarch said.

"Oh, you don't need to worry about that. I can use this so I do not spend time on the journey," Aldrian said, when suddenly a figure appeared beside him.

Patriarch Geodard and the others were stunned, their eyebrows rising in shock. The figure was Aldrian's avatar, but to them, it looked as though Aldrian had a twin.

"This is my avatar, or my clone if you prefer to call it that. I will let him accompany you back to your world, and once you arrive, you can strategize your counterattack against the devils with him. You do not have to worry about his cognitive or communication skills. Just consider him a normal living being."

The others widened their eyes in shock and looked at the avatar once more. All of them were pseudo-immortal stage cultivators, and they already knew many kinds of clone techniques and how to differentiate them. The senses of pseudo-immortal stage cultivators were sharp, after all.

Yet the avatar beside Aldrian was something they did not expect to be merely a clone. That was because the first thing that came to their minds was that this avatar was a normal living being. They did not sense any irregularities in the avatar's body, which made them think that he was simply a normal, individual entity.

After a few seconds of shock, Patriarch Geodard took a deep breath before releasing it. "Your Majesty, I know this may sound presumptuous, but may I examine your avatar? I am truly speechless and would like to learn more about it."

"Of course you may," Aldrian said, then gave a signal to his avatar with a tilt of his head. The avatar moved forward, approaching Patriarch Geodard, and stopped right in front of him. The patriarch then began to observe it. The others did the same, and after a few moments of observation, the patriarch grew bolder.

"Please excuse me, Your Majesty," he said as he grabbed the avatar's body and began to examine it.

After a few moments, he finally finished, and it made his and the others' hearts tremble.

'This avatar almost has no weaknesses. Overall, he is truly like a normal living being. How is that possible?' the patriarch thought.

The only weakness he could sense from the avatar was revealed only when he touched and examined its body in its entirety. He could sense the energy that constituted the avatar's body, but even that was only possible after he focused his senses entirely on it. Besides that, he did not find any sign that indicated this avatar was merely a clone.

Patriarch Geodard then looked at Aldrian, who was smiling at him. He truly felt amazed at this moment, for he had just witnessed one of Aldrian's techniques. A technique that should have been simple, yet it had already astonished him.

He sighed. "Truly amazing, Your Majesty. At this moment, my mind has truly been opened to new knowledge, as expected of your great self." He glanced at the avatar for a moment before looking back at Aldrian.

"I represent all my people and the people of my world. I convey our gratitude to Your Majesty, Aldrian the Great." He bowed slightly to Aldrian, followed by the others.

Aldrian waved his hand. "No problem, but I think you are too quick to say something like that right now. We still have to win the war in your world first."

Patriarch Geodard nodded with a smile. Although he still had a little doubt about whether an avatar could truly make a difference compared to the real body, he decided to believe in Aldrian's plan. He did not know the true depth of Aldrian's abilities and strength, so he did not want to underestimate even his clone.

Not long after that, they conversed for a while before Patriarch Geodard and his group excused themselves, as they decided to quickly return to their world. They had departed from their world silently so the devils would not take advantage of their absence, which meant they needed to return as soon as possible to support their forces once more.

After the group from the Alfemin family left, Aldrian received some other guests again as he continued his normal activities as emperor for the rest of the day.

-----

Time passed by quickly, and another five months went by. The Aster Empire was still experiencing an influx of visitors from outside the Central Star Cluster, which made the continent increasingly boisterous. In every city and settlement, millions, or even billions, of people from various races and places across space mixed together.

Because some of the cities became extremely crowded, Aldrian decided to build several new cities to accommodate the many newcomers. With Aldrian's approval, many chose to migrate and settle within the empire, making it their new home.

This kept the empire's officials busy over the past few months, as they worked to construct infrastructure and manage the continuous influx of people.

Thanks to Aldrian's reputation, there were almost no individuals who dared to create trouble. Almost...

That was because some people clearly did not take Aldrian's rules seriously. They caused trouble for others and acted arrogantly, despite Aldrian having given them a place to stay.

Aldrian did not tolerate such behavior. His punishment was swift and truly harsh. Death or expulsion marked their end in the Aster empire.

Aldrian did not hesitate, and it gave many newcomers a clear warning. If they wanted to live in his empire, then they had better behave. No matter their identity, he would administer the same punishment.

It was a warning that would be engraved into the minds of all newcomers.

However, such matters were only minor events in the eyes of the original citizens of the Aster Empire. They trusted their emperor to enforce the rules firmly, so they did not worry about powerful outsiders looking for trouble.

To them, it was no more than their emperor killing a few flies that disturbed the harmony and order of the empire, and that was all.

There were many things far more important than talking about dead troublemakers or the expulsion of groups of cultivators.

For example, at this moment, the atmosphere across the Aster Empire was more joyous than usual. Many people eagerly anticipated the next day, because—

That was the day Aldrian married Sylphia.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 931 - 931: Before the Marriage

[ 1,489 words ]

For the past two weeks, the entire Barisan Continent has become festive with preparations for a marriage that many considered to be the grandest wedding that would ever take place on the continent.

Aldrian, their emperor, would finally marry his fiancée, Sylphia Evergreen, and officially make her the empress of the empire. For many, especially the elves of the Ivory Kingdom, they had already been waiting for this moment.

The situation in the capital city of the Ivory Kingdom was the most festive, as this place would become the wedding venue. Many suggested that Aldrian could hold the wedding in the main church, just like his parents, or in his palace.

However, Aldrian decided to hold it in Sylphia's birthplace in the Ivory Kingdom as their wedding venue.

This was also Aldrian's way of continuing the elven tradition of marrying under the shade of the World Tree. This act was considered a declaration of a couple's oath and love for each other in the presence of the branches of the heavenly tree of the world.

Evergreen City at this moment was truly a complete contrast to its past. In the past, this city still maintained most of its conservatism by limiting visits from other races. But since the continent opened to the world, the capital city had slowly become much more open to visitors from various races.

In fact, many cities of the kingdom changed just like the capital city. The elves knew that they would hinder their development if they did not change and continued to remain old-fashioned. That was why, since the past two years, the situation of the kingdom had truly changed, with many races able to stay in cities across the kingdom.

Those who stayed in the kingdom also did not create any trouble and even tried to live in harmony with the elves. Even if trouble arose, it would be quickly resolved, as they did not want even the smallest problem to reach the ears of the emperor. They did not want to drag Aldrian into their problems, as they knew his punishment was truly harsh.

As tomorrow was the date of the emperor's wedding, Evergreen City was already packed with many visitors from various origins. Many of them were leaders of various forces across the Ancient Blue Gate World and other worlds. They had already been staying in the city for the past week, so they would not be left without a place to stay.

They knew that this wedding would attract numerous people, and it would be difficult to reserve rooms, as many people would be staying in the city. They needed to act fast, as it was first come, first served.

The streets across the capital were already decorated with a green and red theme. Green represented the elves, who favored nature, while red was more common in human marriages, symbolizing good luck and happiness.

It also symbolized the red thread of fate that connected two people, who could finally unite under the umbrella of love as husband and wife.

-----

In the royal palace, a platform was already being built in the front garden of the palace. This would become the platform where Aldrian and Sylphia would declare their oath tomorrow. The garden had also been modified so it could accommodate thousands of guests who wanted to watch the procession directly.

Many people were still busy working to prepare the venue, with many elves and even dwarves taking part in the work.

As for King Ladwin, he was inside the palace, receiving many guests who came to congratulate him. His expression truly could not be hidden, showing just how joyous he was at this moment. His smile was bright and wide, making it clear to those who knew him that this was the most joyous expression he had shown in his entire life.

Beside him was his wife, Queen Elaria, who was also showing her happiness. Although not as openly as her husband, she still maintained her gracefulness.

While the king and queen conversed with the visitors, all of their children were gathered in a deeper part of the palace. All six of their children sat around a table surrounded by an indoor garden full of flowers.

Arvan, the first prince; Ravion, the second prince; Herlan, the third prince; Arion, the fourth prince; Aran, the fifth prince; and finally Sylphia, the princess.

The atmosphere was truly amicable and relaxing, with Sylphia occasionally giggling as she listened to her older brothers telling stories.

For the royal siblings, this was a rare time when they could spend time gathering together like this. Usually, they were separated by their own busyness.

They never truly had the time to gather completely like this.

"To think that our little sister will be the first one to marry instead of her big brothers. I suddenly feel a bit sad," Ravion said with a sigh. Then he looked at Sylphia with a smile.

"So, should I call you Your Majesty in the future, even in private?" he asked with a teasing expression.

"Stop it, Brother Ravion. All of you don't have to act formal in front of me even after I marry Aldrian. I would just feel bad if you suddenly changed how you act toward me after all the years we have spent together," Sylphia said with a slightly bashful expression.

"But still, I cannot believe that you will marry someone like His Majesty, a man unlike any other, and that we will finally become one family with him," Arion said, then sighed. "Sometimes I remember the time a few years back when His Majesty still stayed in the palace, when we could still interact casually like normal friends. Truly, time passes quickly."

"Yes, I can still remember when we trained in archery together and simply talked about many things. Now he is already beyond our reach and has become the ruler of this land," Aran said.

"Sometimes, I hope we could go back to that time, when we could act like normal friends," he added, which made Herlan smile.

"Well, you could act friendly toward His Majesty just like in the past. Are you not the one who chose to act formal toward him? If you meet him tomorrow, you could put your arm around his shoulder without many words, just like how close friends should be," he said, which made Aran show an irritated expression.

"Are you for real?" Aran asked, which made the others chuckle.

"Little sister, I know that His Majesty will take good care of you, but in the future, if you ever miss your family here, you can come back anytime. Do not hold your longing too tightly in your heart," suddenly, the oldest among them, the first prince, Arvan, said, which made all of them look at him in surprise.

Their eldest brother was the strictest and most stern among them. However, they knew that as the eldest, he bore many responsibilities, and he had already been prepared by their father to be the successor to the throne.

Their eldest brother was simply showing his love for his younger siblings in his own way, making sure that they could live in harmony and that nothing would go wrong in their lives.

They rarely saw him show any expression other than calmness or sternness. Yet at this moment, he was showing worry and even a touched expression. It seemed like he was trying not to show his sadness, which astonished them.

To think that their eldest brother could show such an expression.

But then Sylphia showed a warm smile.

"I will, Eldest Brother. You don't have to worry about me. If I miss all of you, I will not keep my longing inside, not for all of you, nor for Father and Mother," she said, then slightly pouted.

"And you don't have to feel like I am going somewhere far away. I still live on the same continent, you know? If I feel like I miss you all, I can just use teleportation portal. So why feel sad?"

The others chuckled and laughed, while Arvan finally showed a smile. They continued their conversation, full of happiness and jokes, wanting to make use of their remaining time together until Sylphia had to prepare for her wedding.

-----

While Sylphia was gathered with her family, Aldrian was also gathered with his own.

At this moment, in the beautiful garden of Aldrian's palace, he was together with his father and mother, while Celestina was in his mother's arms, playing with her doll. She swung the doll a few times, as if imagining that it could move on its own.

Eleine was also standing right behind Irene. Although she was not truly Aldrian's blood family, with how close she was to Irene and the other members of the family, she was already considered part of it. She was involved in their conversation, or at least able to listen to them closely.

"Aha,ahaha," Celestina happily swung her doll, which made the others smile at her adorable expression and actions.

After observing her play for a few seconds, Aldrey looked at Aldrian with a smile.

"How are you feeling, son?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 932 - 932: The Wedding 1

[ 1,648 words ]

"How are you feeling, son?" Aldrey asked.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. "I'm good, Father. Well, maybe a little nervous for tomorrow, but overall, I'm good."

Aldrey nodded. "Good. Tomorrow, you will gain another status besides being the emperor of an empire. You will also become a husband to someone, a leader of your own household. I don't think I have to give you much advice about it, as you have already shown how a husband and a leader of a family should be."

"But I still want to tell you this. Once you and Sylphia formally tie yourselves together in the bond called husband and wife, I hope that you never hurt your wife's heart. Keep supporting each other. There might be ups and downs in the marriage, but as long as you still love each other, every problem can be solved."

Irene beside him nodded in agreement. "Take care of Sylphia with the best treatment, Aldrian. She is a good girl for you, as she has always supported you. Well, all of your women are good, but what I want to say is this: do not take her kindness and loyalty for granted. Make sure she does not feel sad," she chimed in.

"I'm afraid that because of your activities and reputation, as time passes, you might forget who is behind you. Please do not change into that kind of person," she added.

Aldrian's expression turned serious, and he nodded.

"I might have shortcomings, but I will make sure not to hurt her feelings. I will not just leave her if I want to do something that also affects her. Although I cannot guarantee that our life will always be full of sunshine, I will make sure to always cherish her and keep her in my heart, just like she always keeps me in her heart," he said seriously.

Aldrey and Irene smiled upon hearing that.

"Bo... bo... bo." Suddenly, Celestina in Irene's arms looked at Aldrian happily, and she stretched both of her small arms toward him as if she wanted to be held by Aldrian. The doll in her grasp fell to the ground, which was then picked up by Eleine.

Irene sighed. "Look at how Celestina seems to want to be held by you. I'm afraid that in the future, she will always follow you everywhere."

Aldrian smiled warmly. "Then let her follow me everywhere. I will bring her to many places."

"Don't bring her to strange places." Suddenly, Aldrey said, which made Aldrian smirk at him.

"Strange places such as what?" he asked, which made Aldrey not know how to answer.

He glanced at Irene, who looked at him with a narrowed gaze. Sweat roll down his forehead and then he cleared his throat.

"Well, there are many strange places, so without me explaining, you should already know. Anyway, it looks like Celestina wants to play with you."

Aldrian just smiled, looking at his father's attempt to redirect the conversation, but he also did not push it and looked at Celestina, who was still stretching her arms toward him as if she wanted to reach him. Irene also did not seem bothered by Aldrey's words anymore and handed Celestina to Aldrian.

Not long after that, Aldrian entertained Celestina as he made her fly. The scene, full of Celestina's laughter, truly warmed the hearts of Aldrian's family. There was only happiness, and for the rest of the day, they spent most of their time together before they also had to prepare for tomorrow.

-----

On the next day, after the sun rose from the eastern horizon, the people across the continent were already waiting enthusiastically for the marriage procession to start. Even before the sun rose, many were already waiting, stopping by to look at the giant screens in the sky.

The screens were already spread across many places on the continent so that the people could see the procession even though they could not attend the venue directly.

As the sun slowly rose higher, the atmosphere became more festive, especially at the wedding venue. The guests had already gathered in the palace's garden and were waiting for the procession to start.

It was a rare occasion where, in one place, many people could see numerous powerhouses from across the Ancient Blue Gate World and even other worlds gathered together. In fact, this was the first time ever that all of them could gather like this.

Figures such as Emperor Rozwald, King Frederick, and Queen Revania were present. Even someone who rarely came out, like Empress Viena of the Verdyn Empire, was here. The elven empress finally showed herself outside of the elven continent, which made her one of the figures many wished to interact with.

There were also figures like the Sword Maiden's master and the new patriarch of the Barevisk family.

There were even figures from different star clusters.

These powerhouses also took advantage of this event to interact with each other. In this rare occasion where they could gather in one place, they could discuss matters that might benefit their parties and also build connections with various powers.

As time kept ticking and the moment for the procession to start almost arrived, the royal official announced that the event would commence and requested the guests to prepare themselves. The venue slowly turned silent, and only a few shushing sounds could be heard here and there.

After waiting for a few minutes, the announcer finally declared to the masses that the procession had commenced. After the wedding procession officially started, from the side of the garden, the royal teacher, Elthar, walked into the scene.

He was wearing a royal robe that showed his status. His face was calm as he walked toward the platform, and after he arrived on it, he stopped right at the center. He swept his gaze across all the guests and then closed his eyes.

"Today, we will witness a couple of beings united by fate as they set sail on the journey of building a household. With their love for each other, we will witness the beginning of the story of a husband and wife whose future will be filled with affection." he said.

His voice could be clearly heard across the continent.

Royal Teacher Elthar then opened his eyes and smiled. "The two beings who will unite under the umbrella of husband and wife come from different races. This shows that love sees no race. Once love takes root, all differences fade, and the only thing that matters is how you spend your time with the person you love."

"With the wedding serving as the official recognition of a couple's status, it will strengthen their love. Well, for our case, this is special because we have never had this kind of wedding in the royal family, so we had to adjust some matters to accommodate different opinions. Please forgive us if it might seem strange in some people's minds."

Some people smiled and giggled upon hearing that, but Royal Teacher Elthar continued.

"Alright, I know that all of you already can't wait to see the main event, so let us get started. For the first event, let us greet our groom's family."

Not long after the announcement, suddenly from the direction outside of the capital, a big flying carriage pulled by six flying horses approached the wedding venue. The carriage clearly bore the symbol of the Aster Imperial Family, the symbol of absolute rule.

The carriage landed on the street right outside the palace's main gate, where a red carpet had already been laid all the way to the platform that could be seen from the gate. A sea of people had also already filled both sides of the road, as they wanted to see the wedding as well.

As the carriage stopped, the people eagerly tried to see the figures who would come out from it.

After the carriage doors opened, the first ones to step out were Aldrian's parents. Aldrey helped his wife step down from the carriage, with Celestina in her arms.

The moment many people saw them, discussions sparked, especially when they noticed Celestina. It was the first official appearance of Celestina to the public, as until now they had only heard that Aldrian's mother had given birth to a daughter.

The imperial family had also never shown the baby to the masses, so they had never seen her until today.

"Look at Her Highness, she is so cute," one of the female onlookers commented.

"She will grow up beautiful like Her Majesty Irene, with eyes just like His Majesty Aldrey," another commented.

As the discussions spread among the people, Celestina also looked around her surroundings, curious about the new place. This was the first time she had come out of the palace grounds and also the first time she had been in the presence of so many people, so she seemed both confused and curious.

Behind Aldrey and Irene, Eleine, Baek Jimin, and Angelica also came down from the carriage. This caused discussion due to Angelica's presence in the carriage.

For Baek Jimin and Eleine, many understood that one of them was Aldrian's woman, while the other was Irene's retainer.

Then what about Angelica?

This caused gossip to spread as people wondered why Angelica was also included in the groom family's carriage. Angelica, who could hear the gossip, could only try to keep her expression calm and not show any flustered reaction.

They kept walking until they almost reached the platform, where Queen Elaria and all of the princes were waiting to greet them.

"We welcome all of the groom's family to the wedding venue. Please accept our deepest respect," Royal Teacher Elthar said.

Queen Elaria and the five princes greeted Aldrian's family the moment they reached them. They conversed for a short time before all of them took their seats near the platform.

"With the arrival of the groom's family, let us now greet one of our stars today, our beautiful bride, who will enter the venue from the platform's right side, as seen from the guests." Royal Teacher Elthar announced, which made all the people look in the same direction.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 933 - 933: The Wedding 2**

[ 1,514 words ]

Not far from the guests' seats, a teleportation formation was placed on the garden's pavement. At this moment, all eyes were directed toward the teleportation formation, which a few seconds later suddenly lit up.

The moment the light disappeared, many people gasped as what they saw stole their breath away. Sylphia's figure appeared with King Ladwin beside her, but many eyes focused on Sylphia. That was because of how beautiful she was at this moment.

Her clear blue eyes looked serene, and her beautiful face captivated many. Her long golden hair, tied in a ponytail and covered by a transparent white veil, added to her beauty. Her white, porcelain-like skin was without any speck of dust.

Moreover, the white-green wedding dress she wore, which revealed her smooth neck, made her appear truly graceful and transcendent.

As King Ladwin escorted his daughter toward the platform, her beautiful wedding dress, long enough to fill the entire pavement behind her, spread out, displaying its grandness and gracefulness. Even the way she walked was perfect, making it seem as though she had no flaws at this moment.

All eyes were on Sylphia, and all of them shared the same expression of amazement. There was no one who thought that Sylphia was lacking in any way. They believed that this was how the wife of the emperor should be. This was how the empress of the Great Aster Empire should be.

Many men felt their hearts beating faster as time passed while looking at Sylphia, and they tried to calm themselves. They did not want to think improperly about their future empress. Many felt guilty about their feelings, as wanting a woman like Sylphia felt like blasphemy to them. She was too sacred for them to even imagine such thoughts about her.

King Ladwin, who was beside her escorting her, felt proud of his daughter, but behind his proud eyes, there was also sadness. As a father, he finally had to give his precious daughter to someone else. Although he had already not seen much of her, as she spent most of her time in Aldrian's palace, it still felt different, as this was the true wedding of his daughter.

With this event, he would formally give his daughter into someone else's hands, finally passing the responsibility of taking care of her to another person.

King Ladwin took a breath, trying to calm himself and suppress his sadness. He tried to keep his smile, determined not to show his sorrow on this joyous day.

Moreover, he felt relieved that the man his cherished daughter would be with was the best man he could have asked for. Even that man was too perfect for Sylphia or for any women. He truly believed that his daughter was blessed by the heavens and the Heavenly Tree of the world. She was the fortune of their family.

They continued walking and stepped onto the platform until they reached the front of the Royal Teacher, Elthar. The royal teacher smiled as his gaze lingered on Sylphia for a

moment. He also felt touched, as he had seen her grow up since childhood. He had even taught her many things over the years, which created an emotional connection between them.

Now, she was ready to bear the status of someone else's wife.

He took a deep breath and spoke.

"The bride has arrived at the sacred place where all of us will hear her vows later. Now, let us greet our other star today, our revered groom."

Not long after that, all eyes turned toward the distant sky, where a flying carriage could be seen approaching from outside the capital. One grand carriage, bearing the symbol of the absolute ruler and pulled by six flying horses, approached gracefully. A few moments later, it finally landed at the same spot where Aldrian's family had landed earlier.

This carriage was different from the earlier ones, as it was much smaller, yet its grandness was unmatched by any other carriage. Even merely looking at the symbol of the absolute ruler made people feel the urge to prostrate themselves before it.

The moment the carriage stopped, a royal official opened the door. A moment later, a leg could be seen stepping outside. Soon after, a figure fully revealed himself to the world, causing many hearts to skip a beat, especially among the women. Some of them even looked as though they were about to faint.

The moment many people saw Aldrian's figure, they seemed to forget how to breathe, overwhelmed by how handsome and charming he was at this moment.

His serene blue eyes, like the surface of the ocean, were truly captivating. His unblemished face was like a treasure itself, too sacred to touch or even to look at directly. Many who saw his face even thought that they were unworthy to be near his presence.

His long red hair was tied into a ponytail, a rare style for Aldrian. For this occasion, however, he decided to use this style so he would look neat and refined for his marriage. He also wore a white-gold imperial wedding suit specially tailored for him. The white gloves he wore were a small detail that added to his elegance.

Aldrian was truly perfect, too perfect even.

Aldrian ignored all the reverence he received, and instead, his gaze at this moment locked onto Sylphia in the distance. Sylphia also looked into his eyes, and time seemed to stop for both of them. Both of their hearts skipped a beat, and they seemed to find their love for each other burning with greater intensity.

For Aldrian, it felt as though he was looking at Sylphia for the first time again. He felt his heart beating faster as he was amazed by her beauty, just like when he first saw her a few years ago.

Since that day, many things had happened, and they finally became lovers. His love for her had never lessened, and instead, it kept growing. Every time he remembered his visions, he truly felt lucky to have Sylphia.

Looking at her right now, once again he felt how fortunate he was to have her as his woman, as his wife.

But then, he woke from his reverie when he heard the united shout of countless people.

"To the brightest star and eternal light, we greet Your Majesty, the Great Emperor!"

Without any order or guidance, they shouted in unison.

They then prostrated themselves before him. The scenery was truly spectacular, as people across the continent prostrated. Those who had not come from the Barisan Continent but were spread across the land also chose to follow, while the leaders of various parties decided to bow deeply to Aldrian.

Aldrian looked at his surroundings and took a deep breath. He knew that this would happen. He knew that he could not stop the people's reverence towards him, nor prevent them from showing such extreme respect even during his wedding.

"Rise," he said, his voice carrying across the continent.

All the people then rose and looked at Aldrian once more. Under the reverent gazes of countless people, he began to walk toward the platform. He showed a warm smile to Sylphia, his gaze focused only on her. She also showed her best smile as his figure drew closer, and only when Aldrian neared the platform did he turn his gaze toward his family in the VIP seats.

He looked at his parents, at Celestina, who seemed as though she wanted to reach him with her outstretched hands, and also at Eleine, Baek Jimin, and Angelica. His parents wore happy expressions, and even his mother was holding back her tears.

He smiled warmly toward them and then looked back at Sylphia again. He stepped up onto the platform and finally stood beside Sylphia, whose eyes had already reddened from holding back tears.

After Aldrian stood beside her, King Ladwin guided her hand toward Aldrian, and Aldrian took it.

King Ladwin then placed his hands over both of theirs. He finally could not hold back his emotions, his eyes watering at this moment, showing an expression that Aldrian saw from him for the first time.

"Aldrian, I entrust my daughter to you. Please always cherish her, love her, and never hurt her. If... if... if you ever feel that you have lost your affection towards her, if you feel tired of her, please give her back to me. Let her come back to me."

Hearing those words, many people were stunned and astonished. Even Aldrian and Sylphia were stunned, but Sylphia soon could not hold back her tears. She knew just how much her father loved her, and it truly touched her that he would say such words.

He must have been feeling lost at this moment as a father. He had raised her and watched over her since she was a child, and now he had to hand the responsibility to the one who would marry her.

King Ladwin kept looking at Aldrian with reddened eyes. In response to the king's words, Aldrian's expression turned solemn, and his grip on Sylphia's hand tightened.

"I, Aldrian Aster, will always cherish her and love her. I will never disappoint her, and I will never leave her. This is my vow to you, Father-in-law," he said with complete solemnity.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 934 - 934: The Wedding 3**

[ 1,414 words ]

Hearing Aldrian's vow, King Ladwin nodded and finally smiled.

"I believe in you," he said before he wiped the tears from his eyes and looked at his daughter, who had already shed tears at this moment.

He showed a gentle smile toward her.

"Sylphia, be good to Aldrian. Don't give him too much trouble," he said as he wiped her tears.

Sylphia's lips trembled, as if she wanted to say something, but she finally only nodded.

Seeing this, the king's smile grew warmer. Then he turned and stepped down from the platform. Sylphia looked at her father's back and thought that it was as if it symbolized that she was no longer under his care anymore, completely.

There was no king of a nation aura coming from her father at this moment. There was no powerful presence that he usually showed to many.

He was only a father who had finally let his daughter step into another phase of life, married life.

Now, the responsibility of taking care of her and guiding her fell upon her husband, who at this moment stood beside her. She turned to look at Aldrian and smiled despite the tears that stained her cheeks.

Aldrian smiled warmly as he wiped her tears. She really wanted to hug him to calm herself, but she knew that this was not the time.

Looking at the scene, many people were already affected and were also shedding tears. From Queen Elaria and Irene to countless women across the continent, they were truly touched by the love shown by King Ladwin and by Aldrian's solemn vow. They believed that their emperor would do exactly as he had vowed.

Royal teacher Elthar was also touched, but he kept his smile and nodded to himself as he decided to continue the procession.

"Truly a touching moment between a father and his daughter. This also shows that as men, as fathers, they have a weak spot, which is their daughter. Which father would not feel touched and even sad when looking at the daughter they raised flying toward the wider world, where another figure is already ready to continue their role?" he said, then looked at Aldrian.

"A husband who bears responsibility for his household, including supporting his wife for life." He then looked at the guests.

"For the next event, let us hear something new that will make this wedding even more special. As many know, the spirits of the World Tree are figures revered by us elves. They are our guardians, and we consider them extensions of the heavenly tree of the world."

"For this special occasion, all of the spirits of the World Tree on our continent wish to give the groom and the bride their present. The spirits will bring a song that they have already prepared. A spirit's song, rarely heard by any of us, will be specially sung after this."

Hearing this, many were truly astonished, as this was an extremely rare event. To hear the spirits sing, and moreover the spirits of the World Tree, was a once-in-a-lifetime

experience for many. Even more astonishing, the royal teacher said that all World Trees on the continent would join, making this event even rarer.

Even in normal marriages between elves, such a thing had never happened. No matter how high the status of the elves, the spirits of the World Tree would not even react to such weddings, let alone give this kind of special treatment.

That was why the elves who were unaware of this arrangement were truly shocked, as they understood the real significance of this matter.

They knew that the spirits of the World Tree were aloof beings who did not always communicate with other existences. They were solitary beings with high self-esteem, not easily affected by anything outside themselves.

For them to want to sing a song at this wedding event meant that they voluntarily chose to sing on their own. This was truly a great honor for any being to receive such treatment.

The elves who came from outside the Barisan continent looked at Aldrian in a more positive light. They believed that this was due to Aldrian's presence. Although they already held many positive views about him, this was truly different, because even the figures they revered also showed reverence toward Aldrian.

As people were still talking about this, a beautiful voice suddenly resounded across the city. In fact, the voice could be heard across the Ivory Kingdom and even into the beast territory, where a great World Tree stood there.

The voice sounded angelic, forming a beautiful melody that soothed everyone's heart. Although they did not understand the spirit language used in the song, the voice alone was enough for them to enjoy it. Their feelings and imagination were swept by the angelic voices of the spirits, and many closed their eyes.

For those who understood the language, they knew the song's meaning, which was filled with the love of two beings. The song was also filled with praise for someone they believed to be Aldrian. That praise carried deep reverence, as if he were someone truly worthy of all their respect.

The spirit ancestor, who was also among the guests, smiled as she heard the song. She, of course, understood its meaning. She looked in Aldrian and Sylphia's direction and released a sigh. What she saw between them were two beings destined for each other since long ago.

She recalled the visions she had seen of them, which had confused her at first, until she finally understood something. What she saw were two beings already connected beyond their current lifetime.

This made her feel amazed, as even the heavens themselves seemed to support their bond, allowing them to meet again across different reincarnations.

The song continued to resound for more than three minutes before the voice slowly faded away.

Only then did people open their eyes. The song was truly beautiful, making them forget their surroundings, as if they had been brought to another place filled with peace. They even felt loved by someone, despite not having anyone beside them.

That was how great the effect of the song was on many people. Even though they could not understand the language, the melody alone stirred their imagination, and all of them simply felt loved.

Many sighed in amazement and looked toward the World Tree. They truly felt fortunate to have heard the spirit of the World Tree sing.

"What a beautiful song by the revered spirit of the World Tree. This song is presented to the groom and the bride, filled with love, hope for their bright future, and praise for His Majesty, the leader of our empire," Royal Teacher Elthar said.

"Now, for the next arrangement, we are finally entering the main event. We will hear the vows from the groom and the bride, which will officially bind them as husband and wife," he added. Then he took out a long red veil and placed it over Aldrian and Sylphia's heads, covering them both.

After that, he spoke to Aldrian and Sylphia.

"Please repeat after me. Are you ready?"

Both of them nodded.

"O, the heavenly tree of the world that is looking at us right now, we are standing before you..."

"O, the heavenly tree of the world that is looking at us right now, we are standing before you..." Aldrian and Sylphia repeated.

"To ask for your blessing for the married life that we will go through."

"We hope that with your blessing, our marriage will always be covered in happiness and will strengthen our love for each other..."

"For our family that supports us at this moment..."

"And for our future descendants."

"Please protect us from arrogant hearts and the darkness that could weaken our love..."

"O, Heavenly Tree of the World, please hear our prayer."

After Aldrian and Sylphia finished repeating every sentence, Royal Teacher Elthar looked at them and smiled. He took out a small container and opened it, revealing its contents, which were a pair of beautiful rings.

Small white crystals were embedded in the silver rings, glimmering as the sunlight touched them.

"Please take the rings, both of you," Royal Teacher Elthar said. Aldrian and Sylphia each took a ring.

"Now that we are done with the prayer, we will step into the next part, which is the vow declaration. For the vow declaration, we will hear from the bride first, followed by the groom. You may say anything to show your love toward each other. While you say your vows, you will put the ring on your partner's finger," he added.

Aldrian and Sylphia nodded. Sylphia then turned to face him. He also faced her, and both of them smiled warmly at each other.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 935 - 935: Extreme Vows

[ 1,659 words ]

This kind of arrangement was unusual, because normally the one who says the vows first is the groom. But this time, at Aldrian's request, he wanted Sylphia to say her vow first.

The others did not know why Aldrian asked for the arrangement to be like this, but they obeyed him. The order was not important anyway, as the most important thing was still the vows spoken by the groom and the bride.

Sylphia looked at Aldrian with eyes full of love as she then opened her lips.

"When I looked at you for the first time, you gave me a different feeling, one that made me know you were special for making me feel that way. My interest in you developed

from curiosity to affection, until today, where my love for you has grown so big that even hearing your name alone gives me a flower-like feeling."

"The feeling of love that I feel toward you is like something I have stored for so long, and it just burst out the moment I realized my feelings for you."

She remembered some of the visions that she still sometimes received in her sleep or when she entered an enlightenment state. In those visions, she became different person, and she could see herself with a different man whom she always thought to be Aldrian. She did not know why she felt that way, but that feeling was always there and could not be gotten rid of.

Some of the visions were different from each other, and she became a different person in each of them. She was also with different men in each vision, but each of them always had similarities. That similarity was their relationship and the feelings they had for each other. They were always deeply in love with one another.

In each vision, they were facing various challenges that tested their love for each other. They had varied endings, sometimes tragic, sometimes with a happy ending, but they always loved each other until the end of the story.

She did not understand the meaning of those visions at first. But after thinking about the mysterious origin of Aldrian's past life that she learned from her conversation with her god, the spirit of the Heavenly Tree of the World, she finally understood everything.

Those were not random visions of different people. Those were visions of her and Aldrian's past lives. They had already passed through many reincarnations, and in each of those reincarnations, they always met each other and fell in love again and again.

Since then, she knew that her destiny was always with Aldrian. In each of her reincarnations, she would always meet him.

And she was glad about that.

"I'm glad that you are the man I have fallen in love with," Sylphia said as she positioned the ring on his ring finger before slowly pushing it in.

"I'm Sylphia Evergreen. I will always love you and cherish you, in better or worse, in richer or poorer," she continued as she kept pushing the ring. "In sickness and in health until death do us part. Even if you leave me, I will pursue you. If I ever lose my affection for you, I would kill myself before that happens."

Hearing this, many gasped in shock at how extreme Sylphia's vows were.

"O Heavenly Tree of the World, who has blessed our existence and overlooks all of us, I, Sylphia Evergreen, swear upon thy great name that I will always love Aldrian Aster as

my husband, always cherish him, in better or worse, in richer or poorer, in sickness or health. If I break this oath, then thy curse shall descend upon me in this life and in my next life."

Many were even more shocked by this declaration, as Sylphia had used the Oath of the Heavenly Tree of the World to strengthen her commitment to him.

Even King Ladwin and Queen Elaria were shocked as they saw their daughter's extreme measure for her married life. Their daughter had essentially tied herself to Aldrian with a deadly rope. If that rope were to break, she would be the one to receive the harm, and she would bear it alone.

King Ladwin could not help but feel worried for his daughter, but he took a deep breath and looked at her figure once more. She was no longer a child. She must know what she had done and understand the consequences of her choice. Since she chose to go to such an extreme for Aldrian, he could only support her.

He glanced at his wife beside him, who also looked at him with a smile despite the tears gathering in her eyes.

"Our daughter is truly like you. She is firm, and she can go to such extremes that she even dared to use the Oath of the Heavenly Tree of the World," she said, which made him smile.

"She is our daughter after all," he answered. He then held her hand and turned his gaze back toward the platform.

Many felt that what Sylphia did was too extreme, but many others saw it as truly romantic. Many women hoped they could be as brave as Sylphia, while many men could only hope to find a woman with such unwavering commitment.

After Sylphia finished her vow declaration and settled the ring on Aldrian's finger, she released his hand and looked at him with a smile. Tears still stained her eyes, but she did not wipe them away. It was as if she wanted to show him her tears of happiness.

Aldrian smiled warmly at that moment, and his heart truly melted at the way she showed her love for him. He then remembered each of the visions he had seen of his past lives with Sylphia, how various challenges had come their way and how they had always continued to hold on to each other.

The most memorable past life for him was the one where he was a truly poor mortal compared to her high status in that world. Challenges came from everywhere, as many wanted to separate her from him. He had also felt unworthy in that life, as he was just a poor man without any power.

But she had insisted on staying with him, even when the consequence was the loss of her status. She sacrificed everything for him in that world, even her life, and in the end, she truly lost it.

He could still clearly feel the grief he had experienced when he watched Sylphia die like that, a grief that had led him down the path of revenge. That was a feeling he never wanted to experience again.

He believed that the Sylphia before him now was the same Sylphia from all of his past lives. She would sacrifice anything for him, and the Oath of the Heavenly Tree of the World was small proof of that.

If she had already shown her commitment like this, then how could he allow himself to lose to her?

In some of their past lives, he might have been the weaker one, able only to watch as Sylphia was the one protecting him. But in this life, he was the strongest, and he would make sure that nothing bad would ever befall her. He was her husband, her protector, her shield, and the place she could call shelter.

He then took Sylphia's right hand and positioned the ring on her ring finger.

"When I looked at you for the first time, I was amazed by your beauty, but I did not think much of it at that time. I still had something that I needed to do, and I was not focused on romantic relationships." He then slowly pushed the ring onto her finger.

"But as time passed, my feelings grew much deeper, until today, when I can say that I would give everything for you." His smile was truly warm and charming. He remembered once again the past lives they had gone through together.

"You are my destiny and part of my existence. You are one of the things that made me who I am today." As he said this, he also sent an intent toward the heavens. An intent that made the heavens hesitate and even feel horrified. The heavens tried to refuse Aldrian's intent, but Aldrian sternly declared that this was his order as the absolute ruler.

Unable to rebel against Aldrian's order, the heavens finally obeyed him as Aldrian continued.

"I'm Aldrian Aster. I will always love you and cherish you, in better or worse, in richer or poorer," he said as he kept pushing the ring. "In sickness and in health until death do us part. Even if you leave me, I will pursue you. If I ever lose my affection for you, I would kill myself before that happens."

Once again, the people gasped at how extreme Aldrian was. This couple truly liked going to extremes, and the people seemed to understand why they loved each other so deeply. Aldrian and Sylphia were truly alike.

Then they saw Aldrian lift his head toward the sky.

"I swear upon the heavens, with the entire universe as my witness, that if I ever leave my wife unjustly, stop loving her, or treat her badly, then the heavens may send their strongest tribulation as punishment and kill me on the spot. May the heavens and all the laws that make up the universe curse me for thousands of lives."

RUMBLE!

The rumbling sound of thunder resounded across the world as the clouds above the Barisan Continent darkened abruptly, and an overwhelming pressure descended from the heavens.

All the people felt a sudden faint pressure but that still horrified them, as it came directly from the heavens themselves.

At the wedding venue, people could clearly sense that the pressure was focused on a single point, and that point was where Aldrian stood.

Even peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators felt their hearts shudder, fear creeping in because of the sudden, terrifying reaction of the heavens.

They looked at Aldrian, who had become the focal point of the heavens' pressure, and were stunned by what they saw.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 936 - 936: Official

[ 1,659 words ]

The people who looked toward the platform where the pressure of the heavens was focused saw that it had already collapsed. However, their attention was directed to the groom and the bride. They saw Sylphia hugging Aldrian tightly, while Aldrian held her just as close, a smile still visible on his face.

It was as if the terrifying pressure was something he could endure normally, without much effort.

Sylphia, who was hugging him, was clearly showing fear as she closed her eyes and clung to Aldrian tightly. Her body was trembling as she endured the pressure. The

people knew that the pressure was truly heavy, because she was standing in the same spot as Aldrian.

What the others did not know was that Aldrian was using his domain to protect everyone on the continent from the pressure. Otherwise, they would have felt an even more overwhelming pressure.

However, he focused more on protecting Sylphia because she continued to cling to him.

He continued to smile even under the heavy pressure, because of the feeling of love he felt at that moment.

Even when the atmosphere suddenly turned terrifying and the pressure descended, the first thing she did was hug him. She was actually very afraid of the pressure and the terrifying atmosphere, but she forced herself to withstand it and kept hugging him while mumbling, "O heavens, please have mercy on him, please have mercy on him."

Even in this terrifying situation, the first thing she did was hug him and pray to the heavens to have mercy on him. She did not leave him. Instead, she implored the heavens for forgiveness on his behalf.

Then why did the heavens give such a reaction?

It was because the heavens were reacting to the oath he had declared. The content of his oath was truly heavy, one that would affect his next thousand reincarnations, if he were to reincarnate again.

In a normal situation, if someone dares to bring the heavens into their oath, the heavens will give a reaction, and that is not unusual. If the content of the oath is trivial, the reaction will not be clear enough for people to sense anything.

However, as the content becomes heavier, so does the heavens' reaction. For Aldrian, who brought not only the heavens but even the entire universe into his oath, and even dared to curse his own existence if he broke it, this was truly something no sane person would ever dare to do. The reaction from the heavens was, of course, great enough for the entire world to sense it.

Even a god would not carelessly make an oath like that, as it was far too risky.

Aldrian dared to do this because he believed in himself and in the connection he had shared with Sylphia all this time. He believed that he would never break his oath, and that the heavens would carry out what he had already commanded them to do.

Earlier, he had sent his intent toward the heavens, demanding that they give him the same treatment as other beings the moment he declared his oath. They had to place a

curse upon his existence if he broke it, a truly heavy curse that would carry over to his next thousand lives, should he ever reincarnate.

The heavens, of course, refused his order at first, and for the first time, he could feel an intent of fear coming from them.

Yes, fear.

From the heavens.

The heavens felt fear because they were being forced to place a curse upon his existence, something they would never do. Aldrian understood this, which was why he became even more stern with the heavens. He issued his order as an absolute ruler, and in the end, the heavens were forced to obey.

They truly placed the "sleeping curse" upon his existence.

This curse would only "wake up" if he broke the oath, and at this moment, he was thankful to the heavens for obeying him.

Despite becoming the focus of the pressure from the heavens, he calmly received it and used his energy to lessen the pressure on himself, and especially on Sylphia. He kept hugging her while the pressure continued to press down on him for a few more seconds, until it finally slowly disappeared.

The dark clouds above the continent slowly dissipated, and the sky turned clear once again. The people looked up at the sky with fearful gazes. That was a truly terrifying experience for them, and it greatly disturbed the joyous atmosphere.

At the wedding venue, the guests talked among themselves about what had happened, their eyes repeatedly drawn to the destroyed platform. Royal Teacher Elthar had already taken his distance from the platform the moment he felt the pressure from the heavens. Sweat rolled down his forehead, as the sensation had been truly terrifying.

He saw Sylphia still hugging Aldrian, while Aldrian gently stroked her back to calm her down. Sylphia slowly relaxed and lifted her head to look at his face. Her tears continued to roll down, clearly showing how frightened she had been just moments ago.

She had thought that the heavens would do something to him after he declared such a bold oath, so she hugged him instinctively and asked the heavens to forgive him.

"I'm sorry if that terrified you," Aldrian said as he kissed her forehead.

Sylphia let him kiss her, then hugged him again. "I was truly afraid that something bad would happen to you. I thought the heavens might collapse or something..." she said with a trembling voice.

Aldrian felt guilty and gently stroked her back for a moment before looking toward the guests. He could see all of them staring at him with amazement.

He showed a smile. "My apologies to everyone for the terrifying experience just now. I only wanted to show my sincerity and seriousness with my oath, which naturally drew a reaction from the heavens."

"To make up for the unpleasant experience just now, when this should have been a joyous moment, allow me to present my music to all of you."

As soon as he finished speaking, the destroyed platform disappeared, and the soil beneath him and Sylphia rose up, forming a new platform with the same shape.

The guests then saw him take out a guqin from the storage ring he carried in his suit. Everyone suddenly became eager, as they would finally see Aldrian play the guqin directly.

Many had already heard his guqin performance before, but this was the first time they would witness him playing it in person, which made them quickly forget the terrifying experience from earlier.

Guests who had come from across the Ancient Blue Gate world also looked forward to his performance, as many of them had heard it in the past. As for those who had never heard it, they were filled with curiosity and anticipation.

Sylphia, now calm, released her hug and wiped her tears with Aldrian's help.

"This music is something that I prepared for you," he whispered to her, which made her flush and finally show a smile. She felt her heart fill with butterflies and love for him.

He then took his position to play the guqin, and Sylphia also sat beside him. The people had already prepared themselves to listen to the music, their attention fully focused on Aldrian.

A few seconds later, the first string was plucked, then the second. Finally, the sounds of the strings shaped a melody with a slow rhythm that could be heard across the continent. The music continued beautifully, and the people closed their eyes as they truly enjoyed it. Their senses were gradually swept away by the music.

Their minds were brought into the imagination of two figures who had fallen in love with each other. They faced many challenges that tested their love, and together, they endured all of those trials. They went through tragic events that could bring tears, as well as happy moments that made them smile.

The music carried them through the entire journey of the two figures, until they finally reached a happy ending. They were able to live happily ever after, something that everyone hoped for.

After the story ended, the music slowly came to a stop, pulling the people out of their reverie. Many let out sighs filled with admiration and looked at Aldrian with praise and amazement. Without realizing it, two hours had already passed.

Many even shed tears, touched by the imagery shaped by the music. They could feel the struggles of the two figures, and in that moment, they forgot about the pressure from the heavens, remembering only the beauty of the music.

Someone who could play music that easily swept any cultivator's feelings into the melody and bring the concept of the music into their imagination was someone truly great in both instrument mastery and the sound laws.

Aldrian was already powerful in terms of strength, and he was also a great alchemist and forge master. His artistic side was no less impressive, as he could play the guqin at a mastery level.

Was there anything he could not do at this point?

"I hope you like my presence and that it brought benefits to you," Aldrian said before storing the guqin and standing up. Sylphia followed him.

Clap, clap, clap!

Many people began clapping, praising his performance. The atmosphere turned joyous once again.

Aldrian smiled and looked at Sylphia beside him.

"Do you like it?" he whispered.

"I love it," she answered with a bright smile.

Aldrian then turned to look at Royal Teacher Elthar and nodded, signaling him to continue. The royal teacher understood the meaning and walked back to the platform.

Once he returned to the platform and stood in front of Aldrian and Sylphia, he cleared his throat.

"Well, that escalated quickly. Please, Your Majesty, if you wish to do something like that again, please tell us beforehand so we can prepare. But anyway, it truly shows how much the groom loves the bride," he said, which made some people chuckle.

"Now that the vows have been declared by the groom and the bride, Aldrian Aster as the groom and Sylphia Evergreen as the bride, they are officially husband and wife!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 937 - 937: After the Wedding

[ 1,640 words ]

After the official announcement by Royal Teacher Elthar, the atmosphere turned noisy with the sound of clapping and congratulatory voices. Aldrian and Sylphia smiled as they looked at the guests, and after that, they came down from the platform to interact with their families.

Not long after that, many people started flocking to them as they wanted to offer their congratulations directly. Many also used this chance to get close and build connections with Aldrian and Sylphia.

Aldrian was someone who was very difficult to meet under normal circumstances, as he spent most of his time in his palace.

The wedding event lasted for another four hours before it ended entirely, with Aldrian and Sylphia leaving the wedding venue for their room in the deeper part of the palace under the World Tree to take some rest.

After they entered their room, which had already been specially prepared for them, Sylphia instantly took off her wedding dress and all the accessories on her body with Aldrian's help. She only wore a single piece of tight casual attire that showed her curves and long legs.

She then laid her body on the bed and released a heavy sigh.

"Interacting with those people really is so tiring. Training or cultivating is much better than dealing with so many people." she said with a tired expression, then looked at Aldrian with a smile.

"To think that you have to meet and interact with so many people every day. I now know what you go through."

Aldrian smiled at her as he took off a piece of his wedding suit. "Well, you had better prepare for the future, because there might be many who will also want to meet you

because of your status now. Now that you have officially become my wife and the empress of this empire, many will want to interact with you to at least build a connection. The number of people at the wedding venue is nothing compared to what awaits you in the future."

Just imagining it made Sylphia feel lazy, causing her to release a heavy sigh before she rolled onto her side.

"Whatever, that is for my future self to think about," she said, which made Aldrian chuckle. Now he only wore a tight shirt and short pants as he lay down on the bed beside her. He kissed her pale neck and wrapped his arms around her waist.

Sylphia smiled as she let Aldrian hold her, then decided to turn her body and hug him instead while closing her eyes.

They remained silent for a few moments, savoring the quiet and each other's embrace.

"Husband, the music that you played earlier was really beautiful. I just could not forget the melody, and how I could imagine two figures facing any challenge with their love for each other," Sylphia said after a moment of silence.

She lifted her head and looked at Aldrian's face.

"Was that about our past lives?" she asked, which was answered by a nod from Aldrian.

Both of them had already known that they had met each other in their previous lives. However, they had never talked about it in a deeper and more serious manner.

"When I remember the visions that I received, I am just glad that we could meet again in this life and that I could fall in love with you again. Some of those lives were really horrible, and I hope I will never experience them again in this life," Sylphia said.

"You will not experience those bad events in this life. I am much different from those past lives, where I lacked the power to prevent any misfortune. Now, I believe I can protect you from that kind of bad fate. I also feel horrible that I could do nothing in those lives, and I do not want to experience that loss again, especially when I still remember it so vividly," Aldrian replied.

Sylphia smiled and rubbed her face against his chest.

"Yes, I believe in you, and I will also not let those bad experiences come to us again." There was a slight pause before she continued.

"But I suddenly became curious about the lives where we had bad endings. Sometimes I was the one who had to die, while other times I had to watch helplessly as you died.

What happened to you after I left you? I suddenly feel worried, which is truly strange since those events already happened long ago."

"Which one do you want to hear? We can match the stories based on which life it was," Aldrian said.

Sylphia then told him who she was in that life and what her relationship with him had been like. Aldrian also shared the same experiences, and they continued talking about their bad past lives. Whenever they realized they were talking about the same life, they would tell each other what they did after one of them was left alone.

In many of those lives, both of them walked the path of revenge. Sometimes they were too weak and lost their lives as well, and sometimes they succeeded.

After talking about their bad past lives, they also shared stories of their good past lives, where they could live comfortably with each other. They lived ordinary lives without much struggle, sometimes as commoners without any status, and sometimes as wealthy figures with great power.

Time quickly passed as they continued talking about their past lives. Without realizing it, it was already midnight. Sylphia also seemed sleepy, as she felt tired after the wedding, and her eyes grew heavy as they almost closed.

Seeing her like this, Aldrian smiled and hugged her.

"Enough with the stories. Now go to sleep and take a rest," he said. Sylphia only responded by hugging him and closing her eyes. He stroked her head softly until he could hear her breathing become stable, as she finally seemed to have fallen asleep.

He continued stroking her head, simply enjoying the feeling of her body against his. He also closed his eyes, but then he heard her mumble.

"Dear, who are you?"

Aldrian opened his eyes and looked at Sylphia's sleeping face. She seemed to have said that unconsciously, but the question still resonated deeply in his heart.

It was a simple question, yet one he still had not received an answer to, even at this moment. He knew that although the question was simple, it was difficult to answer in his case. For him, the question of who he was referred to his true origin in his past life, the very first origin.

Was his past life's starting point when he became the Great Emperor of All Heavens? Or did his starting point lie much further back than that? Was that mysterious man also one of his past lives? If that was the case, then who was he? What was his origin? If not, then what was his true origin, for all of this power to have fallen into his hands?

Who was he? What was he?

He wanted to know, but the answer did not seem to be within his sight even after all this time. He took a deep breath and decided to put it aside before closing his eyes.

'Someday...'

-----

On the next day, Aldrian was still staying in the Ivory Kingdom and interacting with some figures such as the spirit of the World Tree, Alice, and Olivia.

It had been a long time since he last talked with them, so he went to visit them. He also visited the Forest of Despair to interact with many of its inhabitants.

There were not many changes in the Forest of Despair. The only difference was that the spirits and spiritual beasts there were no longer as hostile toward humans as before.

After everything they had gone through, they understood that they could not continue to carry the hatred of the past forever. From the great war with the devils on the continent to the horror brought by the Devil God, many of them had also followed the war in the Northern Star Cluster.

They could not generalize all humans because of the devils. Their true enemies were the devils and those who tried to antagonize them.

As Aldrian visited the Forest of Despair, many of its inhabitants quickly came to meet him in the core region. They were truly touched that the figure they had long considered their leader finally visited them again. Aldrian did not rush and instead stayed in the Forest of Despair for several hours before deciding to return to the palace in the capital city.

Under the reluctant expressions of the forest's inhabitants, he returned to the palace, where he would spend more time with his wife's family until the day after tomorrow, when he would have to return to his own palace with Sylphia.

In the end, Aldrian would still have to return to his normal activities later.

-----

Night had already fallen again, and the night activities in the capital city of the Ivory Kingdom were much different from the past. It was far more boisterous and lively, with many people filling the streets and many new establishments having been built to accommodate the numerous visitors.

From inns, taverns, restaurants, to various entertainment places, all were present except for red-light districts. Such places were strictly forbidden by King Ladwin, and the elves also disliked places like that.

There were still traces of the wedding's atmosphere, as many people were still talking about it. What had happened during the wedding was something truly worthy of discussion, as it was a rare experience.

Where else could one feel the terrifying presence of the heavens and hear the emperor's guqin performance at a wedding?

Nowhere.

That was why this wedding was considered the grandest wedding of all time.

As for the husband and wife who had become the focus of this grand event, they were currently in their bedroom.

Aldrian leaned against the headboard of the bed, a look of pleasure on his face, as he spoke in a satisfied voice.

"Ah, Sylphia, you are so good at this."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 938 - 938: Roleplaying 1 (R-18)**

[ 1,587 words ]

At this moment, Aldrian was already completely naked, and his glorious dick was being sucked like candy by Sylphia. She sucked it vigorously, moving up and down as if she did not want to miss even the smallest part of his dick, which had already hardened like rock. Her expression also showed that she was truly enjoying it.

Her tongue skillfully licked and stroked his dick, making him show an expression that he revealed only to his women. His breathing grew heavy as he endured the intense pleasure from Sylphia's mouth, which kept playing with his dick.

Her naked body also did not help, as he was truly aroused right now, and if he were not strong enough, he would have already come earlier.

A beautiful elf wife who could bring such extreme pleasure, who would not want a wife like that? He was truly lucky to have her.

As she kept moving her head up and down, again and again, he looked at Sylphia's butt. Her plump butt was white and without any speck of dirt, and it invited him to touch it, so he did.

He stroked her butt, which made her body tremble slightly for a moment, but then she continued. He kept stroking her butt, and then his finger finally moved toward her vagina. Without hesitation, he inserted one of his fingers into it.

"Nghhh." She moaned while sucking his dick, but Aldrian continued with his finger, stroking her from inside. They stayed in that position for more than two minutes, when Aldrian could sense that Sylphia wanted to come, and he also could not hold back. Her mouth was truly his weakness, as he could not last as long as when he pounded her.

After he sensed that she was almost at her limit, he finally spoke to her.

"Wife, receive my yang essence."

Not long after that...

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

He finally burst his yang essence into her mouth. She wanted to swallow it, but she also came, squirting from her pleasure hole. Aldrian's finger was instantly soaked with her liquid, and she almost choked as her mouth was filled with his cum. Some of it spilled from her mouth because she also had to endure the pleasure of her ejaculation.

But despite her expression being full of pleasure and her squirting crazily, she still maintained her position and kept Aldrian's dick in her mouth. She also started to drink his seeds greedily, as if she were drinking water. Aldrian also held the back of her neck to keep her in position.

He kept injecting his yang essence into her throat for the next minute before it finally stopped. He released a sigh, and Sylphia finally lifted her head and looked at him with a beautiful smile. However, that beautiful smile also had spilled yang essence on her lips, which she then licked as if she were licking chocolate.

"So delicious," she said sensually, which made his dick harden again.

Seeing this, Sylphia's smile turned even more sensual. When she looked into Aldrian's eyes, she could see that he already could not wait to pounce on her and ravage her body, and she felt truly proud to make her husband desire her so much.

But then she remembered something she wanted to test at this moment. She saw that Aldrian finally moved toward her, and she knew that he could not hold back and wanted to quickly pound her pleasure hole.

Aldrian wanted to grab her body and make her lie on the bed. However, before he could touch her, he suddenly saw Sylphia's expression change into one of shock, followed by fear. She moved her body and crawled backward to put distance between them.

"Where is this? Who are you? What happened to me?" she said in a voice full of panic and fear. She also tried to cover her breasts with one hand.

Aldrian blinked his eyes several times, wondering what Sylphia was doing. He did not sense any abnormality from her, but then his eyes widened in astonishment as he realized something.

'Is she roleplaying?' he thought.

His dick, which was already hard, hardened even more and pointed upward. Sylphia, who was trying to keep up her act, wanted to smirk, but she held it back.

However, Aldrian had already seen her effort to suppress the smirk, which confirmed that Sylphia was deliberately acting like this and that she was roleplaying.

He could not help but smirk at that.

'If that is what you want, then...!' With a smirk that looked evil, he moved closer to Sylphia.

"You are already in my hideout. There is no one who will come to save you. As for who I am..." He then quickly grabbed her leg and dragged her body toward him, making his body tower over her.

"I'm the one who will give you pleasure from now on," he said, which made Sylphia look horrified.

"No... no... I have to get out of here," she said and tried to crawl away, but Aldrian did not let her. He grabbed both of her hands and held them above her head.

Her posture was truly sexy at this moment, but her expression, full of fear and reluctance, gave Aldrian a different sensation from what he usually felt when he had sex with Sylphia.

"I can't believe I get to enjoy an elf, and a princess at that. This is truly my lucky day," Aldrian said, his gaze lingering on her body, especially her breasts.

Sylphia's face flushed as she tried to struggle and free her hands from his grasp, but he was too strong. Her expression seemed full of despair.

"No, please, no. I already have a husband. Only he can touch me," Sylphia said in a voice full of panic. Aldrian smirked.

"Is that so? Then too bad. I will be the other man who gets to touch you." His other hand then moved to touch one of her breasts.

"Does your husband like to play this? I truly feel he is so lucky to have you, but so am I, as I finally get to taste it," Aldrian said as he approached her right nipple, intending to suck it.

"No, no, please, nghh..." But Aldrian ignored her pleas and finally sucked her nipple hard. His other hand played with her other nipple, which made Sylphia want to moan. However, with a reluctant expression, she tried to hold back her moan while still struggling to free herself from his grasp.

Aldrian switched to sucking her other nipple, licking and sucking as if her nipples and breasts were his playthings. He kept changing between them, and sometimes he glanced at Sylphia's face to see her reaction. However, she continued to hold back any moan, her face flushed, which made him smirk evilly.

"I know you like it. Don't restrain your moans. Just let it go and enjoy the pleasure with me."

Sylphia gritted her teeth and turned her head away.

"No, I will not moan, not for you. I have a husband, and you will regret touching me. My husband is a strong cultivator, and he will come for you," she said.

"Is that so?" Aldrian said as he brought his head closer to her and looked directly at her face. She turned away, as if disgusted to look at him, but he then whispered to her.

"I never regret anything, and I will make you moan with full ecstasy. I will make you mine." His words made her eyes tremble.

She wanted to retort, but Aldrian had already sucked on her neck, which made her bite her lips to hold back her moan. His other hand was still playing with her nipple, and her hands were still held by him, leaving her unable to resist at all.

She could only resist the pleasure that had been building up since earlier and refuse to show any pleasure to her "captor."

"I will mark every part of your body as mine. I will erase every trace of your husband," Aldrian said, which made Sylphia grit her teeth.

"Even if you have my body, my heart will still love him," she said with full conviction.

Aldrian smirked. "Is that so? Then I will make your heart filled with only me after this. You will forget your husband entirely. You will think only of me, and your body will remember only me."

Sylphia blushed, but then she showed an angry expression. Before she could answer anything, Aldrian suddenly kissed her lips. Sylphia, who did not expect the sudden kiss, wanted to resist, but his tongue had already slipped into her mouth. She tried to push his tongue away with hers, but it turned into a battle of domination instead.

As time passed, her tongue movements changed into those of resignation, and she let him dominate her. His tongue freely swept through her mouth, playing with her tongue as well. She also seemed to cooperate, her tongue moving along with his, giving his tongue a partner to dance with.

After a minute of kissing, Aldrian finally lifted his head. Saliva connected their lips, but he did not care as he showed her an evil smile.

"See, you're starting to enjoy it. I already told you to just let your desire go."

Sylphia's face, still blushing from the intense kissing, turned away again.

"Who is enjoying it?" she said in a voice full of denial.

Aldrian was still smiling. "You still don't want to admit it, I see. But it's okay. That was only a warm-up. Now I will make you forget everything except pleasure."

Aldrian then used his free hand to spread one of her legs, opening the way for his dick to touch her slit. Feeling her slit being prepared to be breached, Sylphia widened her eyes.

"No..."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 939 - 939: Roleplaying 2 (R-18)**

[ 1,545 words ]

"No..." Sylphia frantically tried to free herself.

"Please no..."

Aldrian smiled evilly.

"Yes!" he said before he finally pushed his dick hard, and it instantly entered her pleasure hole in one go.

Aldrian closed his eyes as if he wanted to savor the feeling of his dick buried inside her. Her vagina clamped tightly around his dick, which made him want to instantly release his yang essence.

As for Sylphia, her eyes rolled back and her tongue stuck out. Aldrian opened his eyes, looked at her face, and smiled. He brought his face closer to her ear.

"My dick is finally inside you. Sensing how your vagina reacts to my dick, now you finally become mine alone," he whispered, which pulled her out of her pleasure state, and she bit her lips.

"I'm not yours," she said with a flushed face.

"We'll see about that," he said as he then started to thrust his hips. His movements were slow at first, but gradually became faster and faster. A few moments later, he was already vigorously pounding her, his gaze still fixed on her face as if he wanted to see her expression.

He still grabbed both of her hands, so she could only receive his assault without doing anything, showing her beautiful face to him. He smiled at Sylphia's effort to hold back her moans and the reluctant expression she showed.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

He kept thrusting relentlessly.

"It's okay, release your moans full of ecstasy. Express your pleasure. Don't hold it back," he said, full of temptation. Sylphia did not say anything as she still struggled to hold her moans. She was afraid that if she opened her lips, she would moan instead.

"I see that you are quite a stubborn elf," Aldrian said before he sucked her neck while still pounding her.

"Nghhh!" She almost let out a moan, but she held it as she was attacked on two fronts. She still could withhold her moans, but Aldrian was not finished yet. He moved his lips downward until he finally reached her right nipple, which he then sucked.

"Nghhh!" She almost let out another moan from the sudden pleasure coming from her breast. Her body was truly sensitive as he kept pounding her while also enjoying her

breast. He kept sucking her nipple without slowing his thrusts, which made her face show her struggle to maintain her stubbornness.

After a few minutes, she finally could not hold it anymore.

"Angh ah ah ah~"

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Erotic squelching sounds resounded as he kept thrusting. After hearing her moan, he stopped sucking her nipple and looked at her face with a smile.

"Finally, I can hear your beautiful moan, the moan of the elven princess," he said. Sylphia did not answer anything as her face contorted in pleasure. Aldrian did not wait for her answer as he then kissed her lips.

He deeply kissed her while he kept pounding, and she actually cooperated, her tongue dancing with his.

He finally released both of her hands, and she immediately hugged his head. He could now use one of his hands to play with her breast. With her being attacked on three fronts, she was truly drowned in pleasure and could no longer resist it.

"Nggh nghn nng~!"

She kept moaning into his mouth and no longer tried to hide her erotic expression.

While he kept pounding her sexy body, he lifted his head to look at her erotic face. But Sylphia seemed to not want their lips to separate. She stuck out her tongue as if she wanted to follow his lips.

"Say 'I'm yours completely,' princess. Forget about your husband and become mine completely," he said.

The moment Sylphia heard that, a little clarity came back to her, and her eyes focused on him despite the pleasure.

"No, angh, I'm not yours, angh~"

Aldrian smirked. "You truly have great will, but I will break it after this," he said as he then fastened his thrusts.

"I believe that my dick is much bigger and better than your husband's. Look at your face. I don't think you would show that kind of expression to him."

Pak! Pak! Pak!

"No~ angh!" she wanted to say, but the pleasure was unbearable. He kept thrusting, and after a few more minutes, he sensed that she was about to come. Although he could still hold on, he decided to come with her as well.

As he kept thrusting, he said to her,

"Receive my cum, princess. With this, your body becomes mine completely."

Sylphia, still drowned in pleasure, regained a small part of her clarity, and with difficulty, she spoke to him.

"No, angh, please... not... inside, not... inside."

Pak! Pak! Pak!

"Too bad, princess, I will release it inside your womb. You might bear my child after this." After Aldrian said this, he suddenly felt Sylphia's vagina gripping his dick tightly, almost making him release his seeds. He tried to hold it while looking at Sylphia's panicked expression.

"No, please... no, I only want a child with my husband," she said.

Aldrian smiled. "Too late," he said as he sensed that Sylphia was about to come. He finally released his seeds, and at the same time, he deeply kissed her.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

Squirt!

Sylphia's eyes rolled back, and she wanted to stick her tongue out, but his mouth blocked it. She felt like she flew to the highest heaven at that moment, unable to think about anything. Aldrian kept pushing his dick deeper while he continued injecting his cum into her womb, making sure that not even a bit of it spilled.

He kept kissing her during the process, and after he was done, he pulled out his dick and lifted his head to look at Sylphia's face. She looked tired, sweat already wetting her face, and her breathing was quick as if she had just run a long distance. Her eyes were still half-closed, and her body was still trembling from the pleasure she felt.

Aldrian smiled at her condition and decided to take a rest for a moment. He lay beside her and pulled her body to him as he hugged her.

After a few moments of silence, Sylphia finally opened her lips.

"That was amazing, husband," she said tiredly.

Aldrian was still smiling. He kept stroking her head and answered her.

"Well, how could I disappoint my wife after all her theatrical performance? I'm truly impressed and aroused at the same time."

Sylphia smiled, hugged him, and inhaled his scent.

"By the way, where did you get the idea to roleplay in bed like that? I'm truly surprised, you know?" Aldrian asked.

Sylphia smiled, but then she blushed and buried her head in his chest.

"Well, Sister Baek brought a book from outside. She said she got it from a famous dual cultivation sect in the demon territory. Let's just say the book is about how to please your partner," she said.

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. "Baek Jimin? I see," he smiled, suddenly becoming curious about the book. There were a few dual cultivation sects in the demon territory, and just like their theme, they specialized in dual cultivation techniques.

If it came from them, then it made sense that they had many good tips and tricks to satisfy their partner in bed.

Although he had past memories related to bed techniques, as well as the knowledge he got from the lust devil, it would not hurt to look into that book and learn something new.

He could not help but smile as he thought about Baek Jimin.

'It looks like I will have a surprise the next time we have sex,' he thought.

He looked at Sylphia, who was still hugging him peacefully, or more specifically, at her sexy naked body.

Looking at her glistening body, his dick hardened again and touched her crotch. She was stunned and slightly widened her eyes when she suddenly saw his face turn sensual.

"Let's continue, dear. The night is still long, and you still couldn't forget your husband," he said.

"Wait..." Sylphia wanted to say something, but Aldrian had already flipped her body and made her back face him. Without hesitation, he pierced her pleasure hole with his shaft.

"Ah~" Sylphia moaned, and after that, Aldrian pounded her hard. His movements were fast and relentless. He also pressed his body against her to make her unable to move, so she could not escape from the pleasure.

"You are mine, you are mine," Aldrian kept mumbling those words beside her ear, and she could not do much with her body pressed tightly against his.

He kept thrusting without stopping for the next twenty minutes, until finally he heard Sylphia say with a pleasure-filled face,

"Yes, yes, I'm yours, I'm yours. It's so good, angh, ahh, angh~"

Aldrian smiled after hearing that. He then lifted his body while still keeping his dick connected to her vagina and pulled her body toward him. He held her body and kept pounding her from behind. He turned her head toward him and kissed her.

After another ten minutes of pounding, he could finally sense that Sylphia was about to come again. But this time, he decided to hold his cum and let her come first.

After a few minutes...

Squirt! Squirt! Squirt!

Sylphia finally came, and Aldrian stopped his pounding for a moment, letting her finish her climax. Only after she finished did he continue his pounding. Sylphia, still drowned in the pleasure of her climax, could only remain at his mercy as he kept enjoying her.

Tonight, she had to receive all of the emperor's burning passion, and she gladly received it.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 940 - 940: His Avatar's Situation**

[ 1,516 words ]

On the next day, Aldrian and Sylphia were still in their room, with Aldrian awake while Sylphia snuggled against his chest. Under the blanket, they were still naked, and the stains of their battle had not been cleaned. But that did not trouble them, as they still wanted to enjoy their time together.

Aldrian smiled as he kept stroking Sylphia's head, while Sylphia kept her eyes closed and occasionally released a humming sound that showed her contentment.

But then he let out a slight sigh as he suddenly felt bad about one of the topics of discussion from last night, which had come up in the middle of their rest after sex. She did not bring up the matter, but he mentioned it himself, as he could sense her desire for it.

That matter was about their child.

Although Sylphia did not say it, bearing his child was one of her dreams. It seemed that the time she spent with Sylvia had strengthened that desire.

It was a dream that he could not give to her at this moment.

He felt truly sorry and regretful that he could not fulfill one of her hidden wishes. He could only explain to her that it was still not a good time for them to have a child. He still had many things to do to make sure that they would be safe before having one.

Sylphia understood that, and she said she supported him, but he could sense that there was a slight disappointment deep in her heart. Even though it would not affect her whatsoever, it still gave him a kind of bad taste inside him, as he could not fulfill his woman's desire.

This made him more spirited to take back the First Heaven as soon as possible. He had to at least create a safe haven for his family, one that even those gods could not disturb, and only then could he think about having a child.

A few minutes later, Sylphia opened her eyes and looked at his handsome face with a smile on her face.

"Good morning, sunshine," Aldrian greeted her, even though she had been awake for a long time and was simply snuggling in his arms.

Sylphia nodded and hugged him tightly.

"I just feel lazy to get up and want to lie on the bed all day," she said.

He sighed with a smile. "Well, if you say so, then do not blame me if I am tempted by you and devour you all day."

Sylphia blushed, but she did not release her hug. "Whatever, as long as you give me time to rest."

Aldrian smiled, and they stayed like that for more than an hour before he suddenly received an incoming voice transmission.

"We are going to the battlefield in one of the vital regions of the Blue Pearl World. I think this time we will need you to take care of some troublesome devils. There are a few

peak pseudo-immortal devils in this region, as well as millions of devils strong enough to push back the forces of this world even further." The voice came from his avatar that he had sent to the Blue Pearl World with the Alfemin family.

The avatar had actually arrived at the Blue Pearl World three days ago and had already learned what needed to be learned about the war in that world. He had even joined a few skirmishes that were still within the avatar's capability to handle.

The fact that the avatar had not sent any transmission earlier meant that he still had enough energy within him.

Now, it seemed that the time had come for him to be involved directly.

"Alright, wait for a moment," Aldrian replied. He then looked at Sylphia with a smile and brought his head closer to her ear.

"My love, my empress, I think there is a sudden matter that needs my attention. May this subject of yours be given permission to take care of it?" he whispered.

Hearing that, Sylphia suddenly pouted and opened her eyes, looking at him with a clearly displeased expression. But then she showed a smile and nodded.

"You may go, don't take too long," she said. Aldrian nodded in response.

"I will, Your Majesty," he said as he kissed Sylphia's forehead.

After that, he stood up from the bed and cleaned himself using water laws. He wore his casual robe and left the room. He then walked toward one of the special cultivation rooms of the royal palace, where he could handle his matters without anyone disturbing him.

After walking for a while and meeting a few people along the way, he arrived and entered one of the cultivation rooms before sealing it. He stood in the vacant room, which contained various weapons as well as a large formation that functioned as energy gathering formation. One of these rooms was a more ideal place for cultivation than most places on the continent.

Without waiting any further, he sent his consciousness to his avatar in the Blue Pearl World.

The moment he opened his eyes in his avatar's body, he found himself on a cruiser. He looked at his surroundings and saw that he was with a group of cultivators, with Patriarch Geodard among them.

Their cruiser was also surrounded by many other cruisers, all of them moving forward toward the horizon. They flew above the ocean, and the reddish horizon in the distance was a clear sign of devil territory.

From his position, he could see countless dots as well as two large silhouettes on the horizon that he knew to be flying fortresses.

The memories of the avatar surged into him, and after a few moments, he finally understood what they would be doing.

They would attack the devil troops in this archipelagic region to open a path for their forces, allowing them to strike the devils from behind. Basically, it was a pincer attack meant to break the devils' focus.

Aldrian already knew what he needed to do. He observed the people around him.

There were three peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators, a quite formidable composition. But the devils might have more than five in this region. They were obviously outnumbered, and this could become an impossible mission given how large the devil forces stationed here were.

However, the reason these people decided to attack this region was none other than him. He was the guarantor that this mission would succeed. These people, already desperate, did not have any choice but to follow, despite their doubts about the rumors surrounding him.

It was reasonable that they still did not entirely trust him, because they were not certain about the rumors. The distance between the Central Star Cluster and the White Ring Star Cluster was far, after all.

If they failed this mission, then their losses would be quite devastating, as they had already lost many troops over the years. They could only hope that the rumors about him were true.

"We are here, Your Majesty," Patriarch Geodard beside him said.

The cruiser stopped, and they could see thousands of cruisers and two flying fortresses already waiting for them in the distance.

Their own forces did not bring any flying fortresses because of the limited number of the vessels, and they had to be used in other parts of the world. Because this mission was not a priority of the alliance forces, they did not have support from flying fortresses.

"Shit, those bastards really went all out. They are sending six Stars of Destruction. Did they empty the entire region just to block our forces here?" one of the peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators near the avatar said in frustration.

"This might truly be a suicide mission. Just look at their troops. They might number more than three million," another said, glancing at the avatar with an exasperated expression. He was one of those who did not truly believe the rumors about Aldrian's power.

To him, it was simply too absurd.

Although it was said that there were many witnesses and that even powerhouses of the Central Star Cluster respected him, he still could not entirely believe it.

Moreover, this was only the avatar and not the real body.

How could a clone turn the tide of a war? There was no way that was possible.

That was why he thought this mission was absurd and no different from sacrificing valuable troops.

There were others who shared the same opinion as him, but the only reason they agreed to proceed was because the strongest among them had agreed and decided to trust this avatar. The strongest among them was the brother of Patriarch Geodard.

"Your Majesty, what will we do now?" a blond haired man asked Aldrian. He was the strongest pseudo immortal cultivator present, the brother of Patriarch Geodard, Alric Alfemin.

Aldrian looked at the man and smiled slightly.

"Just stay here for a moment. Let me take care of the forces here, and after that, you can breach much deeper into the devil occupied territory," he said before suddenly disappearing.

The others were stunned, but then they sensed that Aldrian was already floating high in the sky in front of them.

Many thought that what Aldrian had said was truly arrogant, but they did not say anything. Instead, they wanted to see for themselves what Aldrian was going to do.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **- Chapter 941 - 941: Underestimated**

### **Chapter 941 - 941: Underestimated**

[ 1,656 words ]

A few minutes earlier, on the devils' side, one of the peak pseudo-immortal stage devils looked toward the horizon. The man had a red beard and a burly build, with a giant axe strapped to his back. His ominous aura leaked outward, as if he wanted the others near him to sense it. His presence was truly intimidating.

"Are you sure that they really chose to attack through this region, Sword Devil? Do they not understand that this is the same as suicide?" he said toward the man beside him.

The other man had the same cultivation as him, but he was much smaller in stature. A sword rested at his waist. He had a youthful appearance, and his long red hair was tied into a ponytail. The scar on his face made him look wild.

"I'm sure," the Sword Devil answered and then smiled. "I received the information from our spies in their territory that they are moving toward this place, and I understand what they are trying to achieve by attacking through this route. They are trying to break our focus while also attacking the western region."

The burly man snorted and put on a mocking expression.

"How dare they do that when they should know we are guarding this region. With how limited their resources are, I doubt they have the power to breach through us." He said before looking at the other figure beside him.

"What do you think, Spear Devil?"

He asked a beautiful woman with long white hair. She was wearing tight armor that accentuated her curves, and a long spear was strapped to her back.

"If they decide to pass through this region, then that means they have something that makes them confident in attacking this place, or they are only hoping for the success of the mission through luck. They might think that we did not gather in one place to face them, so they believe they have a chance." She answered with a calm expression.

"There is no way they will depend on luck. I know that guy Alric will not do something that reckless unless he believes in something that makes success possible," another man said.

This one was actually an elf and had a bow strapped to his back. He was one of the rare cases where an elf chose to become a devil cultivator.

"I agree. Moreover, with their dwindling forces, it would be too risky to depend only on luck or a mere notion. So I believe they have a plan that makes them confident in this attack," another man said.

He was actually a dwarf, and he wielded a giant hammer. Although he was much shorter than anyone here, the muscles storing explosive power in his body could not be underestimated. Everyone here knew that once he swung his hammer, he could destroy anything in his path.

Beside him stood another figure who remained silent. He was a young man with black hair, and at his waist were many daggers, which already showed what kind of specialty he had. He only looked toward the horizon with a calm expression.

"There they come," the Bow Devil said.

They finally saw many dots on the horizon, closing in at high speed.

Looking at the incoming attackers, the Axe Devil smiled mockingly.

"From the number of their cruisers, they are extremely lacking in numbers even compared to our troops. Heck, they did not even bring any flying fortresses. I don't think we need troops at all. Us alone is enough to face all of them," he said.

The others did not respond and instead looked at the incoming battle with calm expressions. But inside, they were also eager to start the battle. The devil troops, already waiting in thousands of cruisers and flying fortresses, were also excited for battle.

Moreover, after seeing opponents that were much weaker than their own forces, many of them laughed and mocked. They simply could not wait to kill.

A few moments later, the troops from the alliance force stopped. The six peak pseudo immortal stage devils could finally see the opponents' composition, and they could only sense three peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators among them.

If that was the case, then just as the Axe Devil said, there was no need for their troops. The six of them were more than enough to take care of them.

"They truly came with such puny strength. Let's just attack directly. We don't have to wait anymore," the Axe Devil said as he pulled the axe from his back. The others also prepared to make a move.

But then they were stunned when suddenly a cultivator appeared in the sky. They could sense that this cultivator was only at the middle pseudo immortal establishment stage.

The moment they saw the lone cultivator, the Axe Devil could not help but burst into laughter. In fact, countless devils were also laughing mockingly as they saw the sudden appearance of a middle pseudo-immortal establishment stage cultivator.

"Ahahaha, what is this? What are they going to do with a cultivator at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage? Are they thinking of surrender?" the Axe Devil said.

The others did not answer and instead kept looking at the lone cultivator. A question rose in some of their minds.

Was there any trick behind this seemingly ridiculous situation? What was the meaning of sending a pseudo immortal establishment stage cultivator?

As the devils laughed and were confused by the scene, the opposite happened within the alliance force. The troops felt fear and despair, as many of them thought they were going to die in this mission because they knew it was an impossible one.

They could only prepare for their deaths as their higher-ups continued with the mission.

They already knew that there was a mysterious man who came with the invitation of Patriarch Geodard, but they did not know if that could change the flow of the battle.

That man was only at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage, and someone at that level could not bring any change to this war.

They saw that man appear in the sky right in front of their armada. A lone figure floated there, as if he were challenging those millions of devils.

They wondered what kind of trick their higher-ups or that man were trying to pull with such inferior numbers.

"I hope that whatever he does will work on those devils. If not, we will lose many of our valuable troops, which could cause us to lose part of our territory to the devils," one of the peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators near Patriarch Geodard said. He then looked at Alric Alfemin.

"Leader, you will also not be free from responsibility if something goes wrong. It will create disunity and distrust among the lower ranks."

Alric did not look at him and kept his gaze on the avatar. "I will take responsibility for whatever happens in this battle, so you do not need to think about anything else."

The man turned to look at the avatar and gritted his teeth.

'I hope that this gamble is worth it,' he thought.

The avatar looked toward the distance where the devil troops were already waiting for the attack and then at the six strongest among them. The Six Stars of Destruction was what the alliance force called them, the six strongest devils in this region.

They wielded different weapon artifacts, and to be honest, Aldrian was quite surprised. This was the first time he had seen a group of devils that consisted of humans, an elf, and a dwarf.

Still, that surprise went no further than that, and he did not care about anything other than his purpose here: to kill as many devils as possible. He then took out a divine-grade sword from his storage ring.

The avatar closed his eyes for a few seconds before another figure suddenly appeared beside him. Aldrian's real body finally appeared, causing countless troops from both sides to be stunned.

They wondered who this person was, and this figure actually had the same face as the avatar. However, his attire, wearing a casual robe as if he were at home enjoying a relaxing time, truly did not show any seriousness toward the situation.

Even Patriarch Geodard was stunned when he saw another figure with the same face as the avatar appear.

Was that figure also a clone? If that was the case, did that not mean this figure was a clone of a clone? Why did the avatar create another clone? Why was he wearing a casual robe as if he were in his own home?

From the devils' side, they could not help but laugh. The appearance of another pseudo immortal establishment stage cultivator would not create any change. They were ants in front of pseudo immortal stage cultivators, moreover, the Six Stars of Destruction were here.

From that appearance alone, they thought that this figure was not serious at all.

"I cannot wait anymore, hehehehe..." Suddenly, the Dagger Devil spoke. He had kept silent until now, but when he finally opened his lips, his calm expression turned into that of a madman. He smiled crazily as he pulled out his daggers.

"I will kill them... I will kill them... all of them!"

Suddenly, his body dashed toward Aldrian in the sky. Under the watch of the other Six Stars of Destruction and the devil troops, his figure rapidly approached Aldrian.

His body seemed blurry, and he unleashed his strike even before he reached Aldrian. He slashed with both daggers, creating an X-shaped energy attack that flew toward Aldrian at terrifying speed.

But the Dagger Devil did not stop. He continued to approach Aldrian even after unleashing his strike.

Many thought that Aldrian was finished.

But then...

Crack! Zumm!

A spatial crack opened directly in the path of the attack and swallowed it. Before anyone could react, another spatial crack appeared right beside the Dagger Devil.

His crazed expression turned to shock as, with quick thinking, he evaded his own strike that emerged from the spatial crack.

Whoosh!

He succeeded in evading his own attack by a narrow margin as the energy slash flew past him.

But suddenly, he could no longer move his body, and then...

Slash!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,547 words ]

Slash!

The scene made everyone from both sides shocked. Their expectations and understanding were completely flipped at this moment.

There was no one who did not show an intense reaction.

The dagger devil, a strong cultivator at the peak pseudo immortal stage, had his head severed, and his body fell from the sky and crashed into the ocean. They did not see any excessive movement.

What they saw was a technique of space laws before the sword strike appeared and beheaded the dagger devil.

The other members of the Six Stars of Destruction, who could see the scene the clearest, were truly speechless. Their hearts beat faster, their minds fell into chaos, and their hearts shuddered.

The axe devil looked at Aldrian with a chaotic mind. In his thoughts, the only possible outcome for Aldrian was death and nothing else. Although the dagger devil had weaknesses, namely his unstable mentality and crazy character, he was still a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator.

No matter how much he underestimated his opponent, he should not have fallen victim to Aldrian. Even if that opponent were at the same level as him, it would still be difficult, so it was even more impossible for someone much weaker than him.

That was why no one stopped him, as they believed the dagger devil could finish that figure swiftly.

He was a strong cultivator at the peak pseudo immortal stage, for fuck sake. So how could he be killed so easily by a figure they had already considered an ant?

What the fuck just happened?

"That man's control over space is truly good and also powerful. He could use spatial displacement, and for a moment the dagger devil seemed frozen by something, which allowed that man to strike him. It seems we underestimated him too. He has a few tricks that made him confident." The sword devil said as he looked at Aldrian solemnly.

But then he looked at the sword on his waist, which suddenly began trembling, and he could not help but feel astonished. He then sensed a powerful sword will coming from Aldrian's direction, which made him instantly turn to look at Aldrian.

Many others also sensed the powerful sword will as the swords on both sides of the troops tremble.

Aldrian had already pointed his sword at the remaining Six Stars of Destruction.

Looking at that posture, a danger alarm instantly rang within their instincts, making goosebumps on their bodies. It had been a very long time since they last felt this kind of sensation, and they knew it was no joke.

The first thought that came to their minds was to move away from the direction the sword was pointed at.

However, there was not even a split second when—

Shhiinnnn!

A giant golden beam of light shot out from the sword and rushed toward the devil lines. It appeared instantly, as the technique itself possessed the speed of light. The pillar of light erupted from the sword and had already split the devil troops' cruisers formation into two.

The sea behind the devil troops was also split apart as the beam instantly reached the seabed and destroyed it.

The bow devil and spear devil, who did not have time to completely evade the path of the strike, had their bodies instantly obliterated by the light. Their bodies disintegrated into small particles, leaving only traces of blood fog, which also disappeared as it was swept away by the golden beam.

The survivors from the Six Stars of Destruction had already appeared far away and turned to look at the scene in horror. But before they could take a sigh of relief, the beam of light actually moved again at a terrifying speed!

The movement of the beam followed Aldrian's sword as he swung it toward their direction and toward the other devil troops. The beam was swept in every direction, and everything that was touched by the beam of light was destroyed or obliterated.

For the devils, they were entirely obliterated. For things like cruisers and flying fortresses, their hulls were instantly split apart. Because Aldrian swung his sword several times, many hulls were split into multiple parts before exploding.

The destroyed massive hulls of the flying fortresses fell into the sea, creating giant waves that spread toward the surrounding regions.

The devils that were still alive because the beam of light had not yet reached them finally realized the situation they were in and decided to escape in many directions.

However, unfortunately for them, Aldrian, who targeted any devil within his sight, continued swinging his sword relentlessly, and beams of light swept through the devils regardless of the distance.

The beams of light reached distances of more than 120,000 kilometers!

If seen from space, someone would see lines of golden light swinging back and forth across the region.

The clouds were also swept away by the light, making the scene from space look spectacular but also horrifying. The sea was truly in chaos, and the land in the distance that happened to be in the path of the light also sustained heavy destruction. Mountains split apart, and the land formed deep chasms in many places.

The light was truly a harbinger of death and destruction.

Aldrian could adjust the beam's range, and at this moment he made it quite long because he wanted to make sure he could kill every devil in this place.

He kept swinging at the escaping devils, but his main targets were still the strongest devils. That was why his swings were focused on them. The axe devil, the sword devil, and the hammer devil had already flown far away, but his light could still reach them.

The beam of light reached the hammer devil and killed him instantly. However, when Aldrian tried to strike the other two, he saw their silhouettes disappear. Aldrian knew that they had likely already escaped using escape talismans or other means.

He did not look disappointed. Instead, he continued swinging his sword and killed the rest of the devils.

Only after more than twenty seconds of continuous swinging did he finally wipe out the devil troops, leaving only the two devils who had escaped. Aldrian stopped Pillar of Heaven's Judgment, and the beam of light disappeared.

There was no movement within his sight, and after he was sure that nothing remained to strike, he inspected the sword in his grasp. This was only one divine-grade sword among many that he possessed from the treasures left behind by his followers.

He only wanted to check the condition of the sword after making it bear the power of his domain and unleashing the longest Pillar of Heaven's Judgment he had ever unleashed. The sword was still in good condition, and he nodded to himself.

As expected of a divine-grade artifact, especially one created by his followers, beings from the higher heavens.

He sheathed the sword into its scabbard before storing it in his storage ring. He then looked at the alliance forces below him.

At this moment, everyone below looked at him with almost the same expression. They were truly speechless. They could not comment on anything, and their gazes were fixed on him as if he were a monster. What they had just witnessed was not a battle.

It was annihilation.

No resistance. No hesitation. No prisoners.

It happened quickly, and the devil troops were already annihilated in less than a minute—No, not even half a minute.

A battle that might have taken several minutes, or even an hour depending on their strategy, ended in a one-sided slaughter in not even a full minute.

Patriarch Geodard also looked at Aldrian with a gaze full of shock. But then he finally released a sigh.

'So this is Aldrian the Great, truly befitting his title.'

That strike just now was already far more powerful than a peak pseudo immortal stage full power attack. The power contained within that golden beam was enough to easily annihilate anything, even pseudo immortal cultivators.

There was also the matter that such a technique should drain an enormous amount of energy, enough to instantly empty a cultivator's dantian. They would normally enter a phase of weakness because of the depleted energy.

However, from what he saw in Aldrian, he did not seem tired at all. His complexion was still fresh, and his body showed no signs of weakness. It was as if he had merely unleashed a normal technique that did not require much energy.

'Wait, before that, is such a technique even possible? How could he unleash such a terrifying technique? Even I don't think a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator could unleash a technique like that, as their energy would be depleted fast enough that they could not even hold it for three seconds,' he thought.

'Just how much energy can Aldrian the Great store inside his dantian? Is his dantian like an abyss or something, allowing his energy reservoir to store so much energy? But he is still at the middle pseudo immortal establishment stage?'

'And did he not receive any backlash or anything after unleashing that?' His mind seemed to start malfunctioning as he felt his understanding of cultivation flip at this moment.

The same thoughts also appeared in the mind of his brother, Alric, who still had his mouth open in shock before finally closing it and letting out a sigh. He then looked at Patriarch Geodard.

"Brother, it looks like hope is still not lost. It seems that the prophecy is true and points toward Aldrian the Great," he said through voice transmission.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 943 - 943: That's Why Many Regard Him as a God**

[ 1,709 words ]

Aldrian and his avatar then landed on the cruiser, where Patriarch Geodard and the others were still gazing at him with amazement. No, amazement was an understatement. They looked at him as if he were their savior, their hero. He was the man who would flip the war situation of this world.

This included some people who had still doubted Aldrian since his avatar came to this world a few days ago. Now, their gazes had changed entirely. There was no doubt left at all. With that kind of display of power, there was no way they could remain unaffected.

Some even felt fear, as they were afraid that Aldrian might be offended by their doubts toward him over the past few days.

They could only hope that Aldrian did not keep their doubts in his heart and that he would let bygones be bygones.

"Your Majesty, thank you for your help. Truly, I am surprised that my heart is still beating fast after what Your Majesty just did. That was a great display of power. My eyes have truly been opened. I did not know that such power could exist," Alric said as he cupped his hands and slightly bowed his head.

The others followed with the same gesture, which made Aldrian smile. He waved his hand.

"No problem. You may continue advancing and strike deeper into the devils' territory. With only two out of the six Stars of Destruction left, your troops can safely attack many devil bases in the southern region of the Serlan Continent. Let my avatar continue moving with you. As for me, I will strike in another direction, where their higher-ups at the pseudo-immortal stage are staying.

"My target today is to destroy some of their strategic locations across the continent and let the alliance troops handle the rest. With that, you will finally be able to retake the entire continent in at most two weeks."

Alric and Patriarch Geodard were stunned when they heard that Aldrian would strike in another direction. This was the first time they heard of a plan for the clone to move much deeper into devil territory alone.

Or so they thought, as they still believed Aldrian to be a clone.

However, they caught one detail that made their minds explode once again.

"My avatar, 'Your Majesty?'" Patriarch Geodard said in a trembling voice. "Then are you...?"

Aldrian continued smiling and nodded. "I am the real one."

The others widened their eyes in shock. This was the real body of Aldrian the Great?! How was that possible? Was he not supposed to be in the Ancient Blue Gate World? That was a five-month journey using an interstellar vessel from here, yet he was already present in this world.

"Anyway, I will go first. It would be better if I can reach my targets for today as soon as possible. I don't want to keep my wife waiting for too long. If you have anything to say to me, you can simply say it to my avatar," Aldrian said before his body disappeared.

The others remained speechless even after Aldrian's figure vanished. Then, at the same time, they turned to look at Patriarch Geodard. Their eyes seemed to say the same thing.

Did you bring Aldrian the Great to this world without us knowing, while keeping up the act with Aldrian the Great's clone?

As if knowing what was going through everyone's minds, Patriarch Geodard shook his head and waved his hands at the same time.

"No, I swear to the heavens that he did not follow me back and that he only sent his avatar. There is no way I could hide it if Aldrian the Great himself followed me back," he said, but then he looked at the avatar, who appeared completely unbothered.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, if I said something presumptuous." He cupped his hands and the avatar waved his hand.

"It's fine. You may converse among yourselves. I will stay in my cabin," he said as he walked away and entered the cruiser.

After the avatar's figure disappeared from their sight, one of the men turned to look at Patriarch Geodard.

"Then are you telling me that Aldrian the Great's real body teleported directly from his world to this place? Are you serious?" one of the peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators asked with irritation.

Being questioned like that, Patriarch Geodard became exasperated. "What purpose would I have in lying or putting on such a charade? To surprise you? What do you think this is? A birthday?" he said before taking a deep breath.

"I know this sounds absurd, but I believe Aldrian the Great truly teleported from the Ancient Blue Gate World to this world just now. Did you not see how he appeared in casual robes, as if he were simply enjoying his time at home? That might be the reason he appeared here dressed like that."

He then scratched his head. "Anyway, there is a saying that I always heard whenever I asked about Aldrian the Great's information in the Ancient Blue Gate World. It goes like this: never place the standards of cultivation knowledge or any form of common sense on Aldrian the Great if you do not want to go crazy. He is someone who constantly overturns common knowledge and does things that no one would ever imagine, to the point that you begin to question his very existence. That's why many regard him as a god."

Hearing that, the others truly did not know what to think. After witnessing Aldrian's strength with their own eyes, they knew the rumors were true. He was someone far beyond their level of understanding. Even after unleashing such a terrifying technique, he still appeared completely fine and even said that he would strike deeper into devil territory.

Such words would sound overly exaggerated if applied to anyone else, but when it came to Aldrian the Great, there might be some truth to them.

Alric released a sigh. "Anyway, let us continue our journey. We cannot waste the opportunity that Aldrian the Great has given us. With only two out of the six Stars of Destruction left, we practically face no major obstacles. I even believe those two will choose to hide after witnessing His Majesty's power, which will give us an advantage in the long run."

The others did not comment further. Soon after, they continued their journey toward the deeper regions of devil territory.

-----

Later that day, Aldrian was already visiting several of the devils' large bases, where tens of millions of devils were stationed, along with many of their higher-ups. The regions he liberated from the devils were extensive, and he had already killed many pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

As he battled, he was quite astonished by the number of pseudo immortal stage cultivators he encountered. Their numbers were unusually high for the scale of a single world invasion. It was no wonder that the inhabitants of this world had been continuously pushed back to their current state.

Later, as he slaughtered more devils, he obtained information that revealed the reason behind it.

This was the first time the devils had invaded the White Ring Star Cluster on such a large scale, and the first world they targeted was the Blue Pearl World. The devils from the nearby star clusters had sent many high-ranking cultivators here to seize the world as quickly as possible.

If not for the fierce resistance of this world's inhabitants, the world might have fallen long ago. Fortunately, this world possessed many powerful cultivators, which was also the reason the devils had been unable to conquer it swiftly.

Aside from information about the devils attacking this world, he also obtained another piece of interesting information.

These devils would receive no reinforcements until an undetermined time. The devils of this world would have to take the entire planet without relying on any external support.

Looking at the situation, he knew that the devils of this world could indeed achieve such an outcome, as the overall strength of the devils here was sufficient for it. The inhabitants of this world had already lost many of their powerful cultivators.

With the number of pseudo-immortal stage cultivators being fewer than the devils', it was only a matter of time before the world fell.

Well, that would only be the case if he had not come.

Now, why had the reinforcements for this world stopped?

That was because it had something to do with the Vampire King. He had used a code that caused a large portion of his devil army to march with him toward an unknown location.

This forced many of the devils in the southern part of the First Heaven to remain on standby and avoid long-distance travel, just in case the Vampire King needed them.

They would have to wait for the next order from the Vampire King before moving.

Even without looking further into the details, Aldrian knew where the Vampire King had gone. He must be on his way to the Ancient Blue Gate World, or if not, then he would first head to the Northern Star clusters before going there.

The moment Aldrian confirmed this, a smile appeared on his face. His guess had been correct. The Vampire King was coming to him personally.

At this moment, Aldrian was standing in the middle of a destroyed fortress. Corpses of devils were scattered everywhere, while rubble from collapsed buildings filled his surroundings. Flames still engulfed the ruins, clearly showing the disaster that had struck this place not long ago.

In Aldrian's grasp, he was choking a peak pseudo immortal stage devil. The devil had already lost both of his arms, and his face was covered in blood. He gritted his teeth as he glared at Aldrian with his red eyes.

"You will regret this. His Majesty, the Vampire King, will—"

Crack!

Before the devil could finish his words, Aldrian crushed his neck, killing him instantly.

He threw the devil aside like trash before releasing a sigh.

"Well, that is it for today," he said as he looked around his surroundings. He nodded to himself, then disappeared.

His body returned to the cultivation room of the royal palace. The Ancient Blue Gate World had a much slower flow of time compared to the Blue Pearl World, so he appeared there when the sun was already close to setting.

He looked down at his robe to check for any stains. After making sure there were none, he stepped out of the cultivation room.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 944 - 944: The Flipped Situation

[ 1,701 words ]

Aldrian walked outside of the cultivation room to look for Sylphia. After a few minutes, he met her in the royal garden, where she was in the middle of a conversation with her two brothers. They were Arion and Aran.

Seeing Aldrian approaching, Arion and Aran stood up and wanted to greet him with a formal greeting, but Aldrian raised his hand.

"Please, brothers-in-law, don't. I don't want you to act so formal, especially when we are in a private setting. Just act normally. I am also your family now, you know?"

Arion and Aran then smiled.

"Alright," Arion said. He then looked at Sylphia. "Anyway, I think we have already taken too much time. We will go first, sister, brother-in-law. Enjoy your time together." He added before walking away, followed by Aran.

Aldrian sighed as they left to give him time alone with Sylphia, even though he actually wanted to join their conversation. He looked at Sylphia, who was smiling at him, and decided to sit on the vacant seat. Sylphia then prepared some tea for him, and when it was ready, he sipped it.

His expression showed that he enjoyed the tea, and while he was enjoying it, Sylphia asked him.

"So, how is your business? It seems you went to a faraway place."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows and smiled. "How did you know that I went to a faraway place?"

Sylphia was still smiling. "Well, just my intuition and conclusion after knowing that you entered the special cultivation room. With the way you explained your reason to me, I don't think you entered the room because you wanted to cultivate. I thought that you might have disappeared elsewhere far away, and that you entered the cultivation room only so that others would not look for you when you disappeared."

Aldrian could not help but feel amazed by Sylphia's intuition, and he nodded.

"As expected of my wife, I am afraid there is nothing I could hide from you in the future."

Hearing his answer, Sylphia knew that she was correct, and she could not help but feel proud of herself.

"Well, yes, I went to a faraway place, to help some people take care of their problem." He then told her about the war in the Blue Pearl World, and it made her astonished. But after he finished recounting his story, she looked at him with amusement.

"You just came to them wearing this robe? I cannot help but imagine the disrespect those devils felt when they saw their killer wearing only a casual robe, as if you were in the middle of your leisure time."

Aldrian smiled and then shrugged. "Well, I am indeed in the middle of my leisure time, since I still want to spend my time with my wife here."

Sylphia smiled brighter before she sipped her tea and put the cup back on the table as she shifted the conversation to another topic.

"My love, if I may know, do you already have a plan for Sister Jimin's marriage? I just suddenly thought about it. I have already become your official wife, and I think it would not be good to make Sister Jimin wait for too long." She paused, looking at his reaction.

"Well, I am sorry if I suddenly asked about this matter. I just cannot help but think about Sister Jimin."

Aldrian was still smiling as he then pinched her cheek. "Why are you saying sorry for such a harmless question? You can ask anything of me."

Sylphia smiled, and then Aldrian replied to her.

"Yes, I have already planned her marriage, and it will be five months from now. But shh, don't tell her about it yet. It will become her surprise later."

Hearing that, Sylphia's expression turned happy as she clasped his hand.

"Yes, I am glad that Sister Jimin can experience the same happiness as me. I can't wait for her wedding."

They then continued their conversation about the wedding plans for Baek Jimin and some other matters until evening, when King Ladwin and Queen Elaria came to them and joined the conversation. Since Aldrian and Sylphia would return to Aldrian's palace the next day, they wanted to spend more time with their daughter and son-in-law.

The conversation was filled with messages and advice from the king and queen for their future. They also discussed Sylphia's past, which made her embarrassed and Aldrian amused. It was truly a conversation full of a family atmosphere.

With so many things to talk about, time passed quickly, and finally, on the next day, when the sun rose, Aldrian and Sylphia returned to Aldrian's palace.

-----

Time passed quickly, and a month went by. During this past month, Aldrian had been doing many activities, such as traveling back and forth to the Blue Pearl World to support the alliance troops there.

With his support, the war situation truly flipped. The devils could do nothing but keep getting pushed back until all of them were either killed or forced to escape from the Blue Pearl World in just two weeks after Aldrian joined the war.

Finally, after ten years of war, the devils were successfully driven out of the Blue Pearl World. This caused celebrations among the people of the Blue Pearl World, and Aldrian's name became far more famous in that world.

His name also began to spread across the White Ring Star Cluster. Before this, only a limited number of people had heard news about him in the Northern Star Cluster. Even among those who had heard of him, there were still doubts regarding the rumors surrounding Aldrian.

However, after what happened in the Blue Pearl World, his name spread to a much wider audience. The existence of a man who could flip the entire situation of the Blue

Pearl World was something beyond imagination. Many had already thought that the Blue Pearl World was beyond saving.

Without much support from other worlds, they were expected to fall into the devils' hands.

Thus, the news that they had actually won the war truly shocked the entire White Ring Star Cluster. Because the war had happened near them, the news about Aldrian had an even greater impact. Many began to search for who Aldrian was and any kind of information related to him.

Because of that, what happened in the Northern Star Cluster also started to spread. This caused many people in the White Ring Star Cluster to be shocked, as there was someone like him in the Central Star Cluster.

His figure had already become a legend in the Central Star Cluster and had even spread to nearby star clusters.

However, because of the distance between the Central Star Cluster and the White Ring Star Cluster, they had very limited news regarding what had happened in that star cluster and its surroundings.

At most, they only knew about the fallen star cluster that had become a place from which the devils could attack the Central Star Cluster and nearby star clusters.

They wondered how the Ancient Blue Gate World could have someone like that.

-----

Now that the war in the Blue Pearl World had ended, the people began to rebuild it, and other powers across the White Ring Star Cluster started to visit it.

Their purpose was mostly to see for themselves the person named Aldrian.

In the Alfemin family's territory, activity began to rise again after the war. The streets started to bustle once more, filled with many activities and a joyous atmosphere. There was no worry and no fear on the people's faces, something they had not seen for the past few years.

The situation in the capital city of the family's territory, Rudenfil City, was the most bustling. Besides the activities of the populace, there were also visitors from other worlds. Because of the news that the one who brought Aldrian to this world was someone from the Alfemin family, many parties chose to visit this place.

At this moment, on the floating land where the Alfemin family's mansion was located, there was a commotion.

In front of the gate, where one had to pass before entering the mansion's grounds, a ruckus broke out that attracted the attention of the gardeners and maids.

They saw a man escorted by a few knights, and he looked furious.

"What do you mean we cannot meet Patriarch Geodard? Don't tell me you don't know the Ignarus family from Veris. Just tell him that the envoy from the Ignarus family wishes to meet him," said a blond-haired man angrily. Even his cultivation aura at middle pseudo immortal establishment stage leaked out.

However, the four guards at the pseudo immortal foundation stage were not deterred, and one of them even sneered at him.

"I already said that the patriarch does not have time to meet anyone. You may come back later after he has time. Until that time comes, you can stay anywhere you want," the guard said, which made the man even more furious. The knights behind him also looked displeased and offended. They truly wanted to attack the guard at that moment.

The blond haired man wanted to shout and burst out his aura, but the guard warned him.

"Don't even think about creating more ruckus. Believe me, you will regret it."

After that, the blond haired man felt as though ice water had been poured over his head. He gritted his teeth as he realized where he was and what he had almost done. His purpose in coming here was to meet Patriarch Geodard and also to meet Aldrian.

If he created a ruckus instead, he would lose his chance to speak with them, and his family would blame him.

He gritted his teeth hard before taking a deep breath to calm himself. He finally spoke to the guard in a displeased tone, "Then I will wait in the city. Please tell Patriarch Geodard about our visit after he is done with his business."

He did not wait for any response from the guard, and his group walked away, intent on returning to their cruiser and finding a place to stay in the city.

The guards who watched this could not help but snort.

"How dare these bastards only come to us when the war is over. Such audacity," one of them commented.

"Even without him telling us the purpose of his visit, I already know that he must want to meet His Majesty, Aldrian the Great," he added, which made the other guards nod in agreement.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 945 - 945: Visiting Another World

[ 1,557 words ]

Inside the mansion, Patriarch Geodard and his brother Alric were inside the patriarch's working room. The room had a large window that showed the scenery of the garden outside, and at this moment, Patriarch Geodard was looking out with a calm expression.

Behind him, Alric was drinking a herbal drink while sitting on the sofa. After enjoying the drink for a moment, he finally spoke.

"This time, it's from the Ignarus family. Well, it's getting more boisterous."

Patriarch Geodard did not change his expression. "I don't care where they came from. As long as they did not come from the parties that helped our world in the war, then let them keep waiting," his tone was clearly displeased.

"The audacity of those people to come now and offer their help to rebuild this world after the war is over, and they even want to meet with His Majesty. I truly want to slap those people for their shameless nature."

Alric understood his brother's frustration, and he agreed with him. He still remembered how most of these families were reluctant to send their support during the war. They could speak thousands of reasons for not helping.

Even when they wanted to help, they proposed outrageous rewards that made his blood boil. In the end, they would let the world die as long as it was not their own.

He knew the reason for their actions.

They simply did not want to spend their resources on another world, even though that world was on the brink of falling into the devils' hands.

Only a small number of families truly sent their help without demanding much in return, but even that was still not enough for them.

Moreover, he knew that between worlds, there was rivalry, and the Blue Pearl World was one of the worlds considered by many to be the most dangerous. With more

famous and powerful cultivators compared to others, the other worlds believed it would be good to weaken or even erase the power of the Blue Pearl World altogether.

This was the very thing that made Alric and Patriarch Geodard truly furious. For the sake of petty competitiveness, they could allow an entire world to be taken over by the devil forces.

They did not consider that their own worlds could be next, yet that was something bound to happen. The devils always expanded their territory, and it would be too late to talk about unity if they continued to ignore the pleas of other worlds.

Such actions would surely lead to the end of the White Ring Star Cluster, the place they called home, just like the Northern Star Cluster and countless other star clusters that had already fallen into the devils' forces.

Alric suddenly smiled. "Well, I don't think those families will let us off easily because of how we treated their envoys, but they cannot do anything for now. They can only wait and see."

Patriarch Geodard nodded. "Yes. As long as the name Aldrian the Great spreads, they will be reluctant to act against us or even against this world. This is advantageous for us, as we need time to recuperate after the long war. We have already weakened greatly, and at this moment, we are vulnerable compared to those major families from other worlds."

He then looked at his brother and walked toward the sofa across from him.

"No matter how arrogant and stupid they are, they will not act recklessly as long as they believe His Majesty is still here. There may still be a few doubtful souls, but that alone is enough for us to keep them in check," he said before he sat down.

"Once His Majesty appears at the victory banquet next week, it will be engraved in those bastards' minds that they are nothing. We can stand without their help. They were the ones who pushed us aside, and they will only remain bystanders in the future." He added before picking up a cup of herbal drink and taking a sip.

"Speaking of the victory banquet, is everything in order?" Alric asked.

Patriarch Geodard smiled. "Everything is fine, brother. There are no issues. The others have also confirmed they will attend, so it will be a grand event."

Alric nodded. "Good. Still, be careful of those bastards who might try to ruin the atmosphere. Those shameless people could attempt something foolish and end up bringing disgrace."

Patriarch Geodard nodded in return. "I have already taken that into consideration, brother. But if those shameless bastards truly fail to restrain themselves and don't know their own position, then I am afraid the banquet could turn into a bloodbath."

Alric sighed. "I hope they understand the situation and don't do anything foolish in front of Aldrian the Great."

The two brothers then discussed other matters.

While they were still talking, the subject of their discussion was already in a world he had never stepped into before.

Aldrian had already arrived at Arantes Star, a world composed mostly of land, with only forty percent of its surface covered by water.

A week ago, Aldrian had been invited by Sword Maiden's master to visit their sect, and he accepted the invitation. This was also a good opportunity for him to visit another world in the Central Star Cluster, broaden his knowledge, and do some sightseeing.

It was also a way for him to take a short vacation after his busy activities.

He arrived at the special landing zone of the Celestial Lotus Sect, where interstellar vessels were allowed to land. After a few moments, he finally stepped out of the vessel and immediately saw that many people were already waiting for him. They included the higher-ups of the sect as well as many disciples.

He spotted Sword Maiden and her master, the Celestial Lotus Sect Master, Huang Zhanfeng.

The moment Aldrian approached, soft chatter spread among the disciples. Their eyes glimmered as they finally saw the most famous person in the Central Star Cluster. The male disciples looked at him with deep respect, while the female disciples blushed at his handsome appearance.

When Aldrian reached the line of the sect's higher-ups, Sect Master Huang Zhanfeng cupped his hands.

"We welcome Your Majesty, Emperor Aldrian, to the Celestial Lotus Sect."

Aldrian smiled and cupped his hands in return. "Thank you, Sect Master, for welcoming me. I suddenly feel bad that the sect master himself had to personally come out to greet me."

"Aish, no, Your Majesty. This is how it is supposed to be. I am the one who invited Your Majesty, so I should show proper courtesy and give you the best welcome," Sect Master Huang replied.

Aldrian nodded and then looked at Sword Maiden.

"Miss Meilan, it is good to see you in good condition. I can also see that you are much stronger now compared to a month ago when we met at my wedding."

Sword Maiden smiled under her veil, cupped her hands, and gave a small bow.

"Thank you for the compliment, Your Majesty."

The disciples who witnessed their senior sister Meilan's reaction were astonished.

All this time, they had only seen her remain expressionless. She was known as the Ice Queen who never showed any expression aside from her calm demeanor.

Seeing her show even a different expression was truly shocking and a new experience for those present.

However, since it was Aldrian the Great whom she was facing, it made sense that their Ice Queen showed a different side of herself.

After that, Sect Master Huang introduced the other higher-ups of the sect to Aldrian. Once the introductions were finished, he brought Aldrian on a tour of the sect.

The Celestial Lotus Sect was located within a valley, surrounded by towering mountains.

The sect was truly vast and had seven mountain peaks under its domain. These seven peaks also served as places for disciples to learn and train according to their specialties. There was a peak specializing in alchemy, medicine, forging, sword cultivation, spear cultivation, body cultivation, and inner cultivation.

Aldrian was brought around to observe the disciples' activities and many areas of the sect before he was finally taken to the sect's main hall. There, many tables had already been arranged for a welcome banquet.

Aldrian's table was placed beside the sect master at the center, while the others were arranged on both sides of the hall.

After everything was settled, Sect Master Huang opened the banquet. They began to enjoy the feast, and while the banquet was ongoing, Sect Master Huang looked at Aldrian with a smile.

"Your Majesty, my apologies if I sound presumptuous. I know that Your Majesty has just arrived, but may I ask if you could give us one or two pointers after this? We would like to learn something from Your Majesty. We know that Your Majesty's comprehension of

cultivation and swordsmanship is profound, considering that you have achieved many things that others believed to be impossible."

Hearing this, Aldrian also smiled.

"Of course. There is no problem with that. It would be my pleasure to offer something that could benefit Sect Master Huang and strengthen the Celestial Lotus Sect as a whole."

Hearing his words, the people present showed enthusiastic expressions.

"Thank you, Your Majesty," Sect Master Huang said as he cupped his hands.

"So how does Sect Master wish for me to give guidance? Through a lecture, or something else?" Aldrian asked.

There was a moment of silence as Sect Master Huang thought it over before looking back at him.

"Well, besides giving a lecture to the elders, if it is not too much to ask, could Your Majesty spar with me?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,543 words ]

The others who heard Sect Master Huang were astonished.

Sparring with Aldrian the Great?

They then looked at Aldrian for his answer and saw him smiling.

"Of course, Sect Master. I would gladly become your sparring partner, but I think we need a large area to do that," Aldrian said as he looked into the sect master's eyes. "It will not be good if we destroy the surroundings."

The others shuddered upon hearing that. Although they were anticipating the spar between their sect master and Aldrian the Great, they were already imagining the destructive outcome of such a match. Even though it was called a spar, they knew it would not be that simple.

Their sect master was a powerful sword cultivator, yet they had never known his true strength. Not even when he joined the war in the Northern Star Cluster, as he seemed to have no intention of going all out.

The same could be said for Aldrian the Great, but the general consensus was that there was no way their sect master could be much stronger than him.

Aldrian the Great was a monster on his own. Even that single sword technique of his, where he could create countless swords, each one containing peak pseudo immortal stage power, was already an impossible feat for others. They doubted that their sect master could do the same.

Moreover, there was a rumor that Aldrian the Great had already comprehended the Sword Heart, a level that only a small number of people could reach. As far as they knew, their sect master had not yet reached that realm.

But as a strong swordmaster at peak pseudo immortal stage, he was someone who could not be underestimated, and he was already hailed as one of the strongest beings in the Arantes Star.

His spar with Aldrian the Great was something worth looking forward to. Maybe they could see their sect master fight seriously this time.

"Your Majesty does not have to worry about that. I have already prepared a good place for it, so we can unleash our techniques without fear of affecting any living beings or structures," Sect Master Huang said.

Aldrian nodded, and they continued to enjoy the feast until the welcome banquet was finished.

The others glanced at the sect master and Aldrian, wanting to know where they would go to spar.

"My apologies, Your Majesty. Now that we have finished the feast, I think it would be good for us to warm our muscles after eating. Please allow me to lead you to the place where we can do so," Sect Master Huang said. It was clear that he could not wait to spar.

Aldrian nodded. "Please lead the way."

Sect Master Huang then stood up, followed by Aldrian. They stepped out of the building, and Sect Master Huang flew toward the southern direction. Aldrian followed him, and the others followed as well.

Those who saw many of the elders flying out of the sect to follow Sect Master Huang and Aldrian were also intrigued. Those who had already reached the emperor stage or above decided to follow them as well.

Aldrian, who was following Sect Master Huang, looked at the sect master's back and could not help but smile. He could see the spirit in the sect master when he suggested the spar.

He knew that with such a burning spirit, it would not be a simple spar, but a "festive" one.

Sect Master Huang kept flying at a fast speed for the next fifteen minutes until they entered a desert region. He continued flying for a while longer before finally stopping and turning to look at Aldrian.

"This place is good. We can freely use any technique here, Your Majesty."

Aldrian nodded in agreement. There was nothing here except mountains of sand.

Sect Master Huang then took out his sword from his storage ring. It was a beautiful white sword that exuded the aura of a high divine grade artifact. As the people who followed him and Aldrian stopped at a distance, they instantly saw their sect master's sword.

"That is the White Lotus Sword, the sword personally forged by Forgemaster Morad. To think that the sect master did not hesitate to even use his prized sword. Even during the war in the Northern Star Cluster, he only used a heaven grade sword," one of the grand elders commented in astonishment.

"The sect master rarely uses his prized sword because of how powerful it is. The last time Sect Master Huang took out the White Lotus Sword was when he faced a powerful devil before he became sect master. Since then, he has only used the sword for training and not for battle. He believes that there is no one who could withstand his sword," another grand elder added.

"Let's move farther away. It will be dangerous if we are swept up in the crossfire."

He and the other elders then retreated to a much greater distance. They also kept the many people who were slowly gathering to watch at bay, making sure they did not get too close.

Aldrian, upon seeing the sword in Sect Master Huang's hand, smiled and decided to take out a sword of the same grade. After that, he closed his eyes. To the others, it seemed as if he was concentrating, but they would never know that he was, in fact, creating his domain here.

The moment Aldrian took out his sword, Sect Master Huang smiled and unsheathed his own. As his blade left the scabbard, there seemed to be an illusion of white lotus petals falling from the sword.

He then took a ready stance and pointed his sword toward Aldrian.

"Your Majesty, before we start, I have to apologize in advance. I might exert too much of my strength. Because of how strong Your Majesty is, if I take it easy, I do not think I will learn anything, and it would be disrespectful to you."

Aldrian then opened his eyes and nodded.

"Please, suit yourself, Sect Master Huang. Come," he said as he pointed his sword diagonally downward.

Sect Master Huang's expression suddenly turned sharp, and then—

Shhing!

Tang!

His body appeared right before Aldrian, and his sword had already met Aldrian's blade. Sect Master Huang tried to slash at Aldrian's limb, but Aldrian blocked it. That single clash instantly created a powerful gust of wind that swept across the surroundings.

However, Sect Master Huang did not stop. He slashed again—

Swoosh!

But Aldrian blocked it—

Tang!

Then Sect Master Huang slashed again, and Aldrian blocked again...Slash again...Block again...Slash again...Block again.

Their movements were fast, and Aldrian had to maintain distance to give himself space to block the sect master's increasingly rapid attacks.

Their bodies appeared in many locations, and the relentless strikes never stopped. Each clash created strong winds and shockwaves that made the scene truly chaotic. Even space cracked at every point of impact. When they appeared near the ground, the vast sand mountains were swept away, exposing the soil beneath. The land was destroyed, forming countless craters.

The people who had already retreated to a much greater distance watched in astonishment. Even cultivators at the pseudo immortal stage could not follow the movements of Sect Master Huang and Aldrian.

What they saw was only a split second of the two figures, followed by a chaotic scene of cracked space, destroyed land, and thick dust. The landscape itself began to change with each clash, causing many to be shocked.

For some, this was the first time they had seen how pseudo immortal cultivator fought. The power they released with each clash was truly terrifying, and they would surely die if they were swept up in it.

"Look, it's Aldrian the Great's turn to strike back." Some of the pseudo-immortal stage cultivators could see that the situation had turned, with Aldrian now on the offensive. Sect Master Huang was forced to defend, yet their speed never decreased.

Sect Master Huang's expression was solemn and focused as he blocked every single slash from Aldrian. Each clash felt heavy, and the speed and precision forced him to maintain absolute focus so as not to lose track of Aldrian's attack direction.

This was truly a battle of speed and power, one that forced him not to make even a single mistake.

After exchanging hundreds of blows, Sect Master Huang finally used his movement technique to break out of the stalemate. His movement became much faster, leaving behind even afterimages that carried an illusion like quality.

Aldrian slashed at the afterimage, which immediately disappeared. He then swung his sword behind him as Sect Master Huang attacked his exposed back.

Tang!

Another strike was blocked, but Sect Master Huang instantly created distance and finally unleashed one of his sword techniques.

Seven Lotus Petal

Seven swords formed around the sect master's body, created from his energy, and all of them flew toward Aldrian. They approached from different directions, forcing Aldrian to guard from every side.

Tang! Ting! Tang! Ting!

Aldrian blocked the strikes from the flying swords, but every time he deflected one, it returned to attack again. Each sword moved in a coordinated manner, giving Aldrian no

time to pause even for a moment. He remained fully focused on defense while Sect Master Huang floated in place, controlling the seven swords.

Sect Master Huang's eyes remained sharp as he searched for even the slightest opening he could exploit to gain victory.

After a few seconds, he finally saw a small gap in Aldrian's defense. He instantly disappeared from his position and attacked.

'Got you!'

Slash!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 947 - 947: Intense Sparring

[ 1,596 words ]

Sect Master Huang's sword almost reached Aldrian when Aldrian's figure suddenly disappeared and reappeared beside the sect master. Aldrian had already struck with his own slash, but Sect Master Huang managed to block it even though the distance was extremely close.

Tang!

The seven swords had already flown directly toward Aldrian, forcing him to retreat to create distance and evade them.

With a solemn expression, Sect Master Huang dashed toward Aldrian.

'As expected, this will not be easy. Aldrian the Great is famous for his mastery of space laws, especially teleportation techniques,' he thought.

'I must make sure that even if he uses teleportation, he will not have room to counterattack.'

He joined the attack in a coordinated manner with his seven swords. His body and the seven flying swords, each one powerful enough to threaten a pseudo immortal stage cultivator, created an amazing spectacle as they continuously pressured Aldrian.

The people who witnessed this were truly astonished by the sect master's technique and the way he fought.

"Sect Master is truly amazing. He can use Seven Lotus Petal with such perfection. Even I can only use five, and I cannot control them as perfectly as the sect master," one of the grand elders said.

"Yes, and he could push back Aldrian the Great with it. But Aldrian the Great is equally impressive, for he could block all of those attacks. He is extremely fast, and his defense is impenetrable. Moreover, his teleportation is another thing that causes difficulty for the sect master," another person commented.

But then some of them suddenly felt something at their waist. For the spectators who had brought their swords to this place, they felt their swords trembling.

"My sword? This is a sword will?!" one of the spectators said before he saw his sword suddenly unsheathe itself and fly toward the direction of the battle. In fact, many other swords did the same, and they all flew toward the battle area, which astonished everyone.

More than a hundred swords flew to the battle area, and all of them actually headed straight toward Aldrian's direction. Aldrian could sense more than a hundred swords coming at him, and he knew that Sect Master Huang was getting more serious.

He was also amazed by Sect Master Huang's capability to control so many swords from such a distance and use them to attack him.

The swords headed toward Aldrian like rain, and the seven swords were still attacking him. The combination of the two kinds of attacks tried to overwhelm Aldrian, and that was exactly what Sect Master Huang was trying to do. He also prepared himself in case Aldrian used his teleportation again, ready to instantly strike the place where Aldrian reappeared.

Aldrian had to block and evade the strikes from more than a hundred swords. The swords that failed to reach him then returned and flew toward him again at great speed.

Now he had to face more than a hundred swords that Sect Master Huang could control. However, Aldrian could sense that the sect master's control over the swords was no longer as fluid as when he only controlled seven swords.

That was why, despite the number of swords attacking him, Aldrian could still perceive weaknesses in the sword attack formation and use them to evade and block.

But he knew that he could not continue like this, so he decided to become more serious. Sect Master Huang wanted to learn something? Then he would give him a lesson.

Aldrian then unleashed his sword will, causing the swords surrounding him to instantly stop their movement. Even the seven swords from Sect Master Huang's technique began trembling and halted, which astonished the sect master when he saw it.

Aldrian finally used his sword will, and Sect Master Huang was truly shocked. He could sense how powerful Aldrian's sword will was. It was enough to affect even his Seven Lotus Petal and bring it to a halt, practically canceling his technique using only sword will.

Even his White Lotus Sword trembled as it sensed Aldrian's sword will.

At this moment, he finally could sense the disparity and the gap between their sword wills, and he could not help but feel amazed. After such a long time, he finally sensed someone who possessed a much stronger sword will than his own. It gave him a slight enlightenment of how a far more powerful sword will would feel.

It made him smile, and it filled him with more spirit to make the battle even more intense.

The Seven Lotus Petal swords disappeared, and more than a hundred swords began falling from the sky as the sect master lost his control over them. Aldrian smiled as he looked at the sect master in the distance, wondering what he would do next.

He then saw Sect Master Huang take another stance, his sword pointed directly at him.

"Excuse me, Your Majesty," Sect Master Huang said, and suddenly Aldrian felt his surroundings transform into an environment filled with sword will. He could feel the sensation of his body being pierced by countless swords, and even when he breathed, he felt pain, as if he were inhaling countless tiny swords.

Aldrian understood what had happened, and once again he admired the sect master's power.

'So this is Sect Master Huang's domain,' he thought.

Before he could think further, suddenly all around him, he could see many small white dots of energy forming and growing, shaping themselves into full sized swords. Their number was far too many to be counted by sight, and all of them were pointed toward Aldrian. It was like witnessing a weaker version of Aldrian's Swords Apocalypse.

Aldrian's sword will also did not have much effect at this moment, which made the power contained within each sword deadly even for pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

The people who saw this were truly amazed. From Sect Master Huang finally unleashing his sword domain and releasing such a technique, only a small number of people had ever seen this sect master's power.

Aldrian looked at his surroundings, already filled with countless swords. Sect Master Huang did not give him any more time, as the swords instantly flew toward Aldrian like torrential rain.

If he teleported without using his domain ability, he would still be inside the sect master's domain and remain surrounded by the swords.

Aldrian decided to block the swords with his defensive technique as he suddenly spun his body, slashing his sword around his surroundings.

It created a strong gust of sharp wind that swept across a wide area and scattered all incoming swords. Countless swords shattered, but Sect Master Huang was not discouraged, because he had already taken another stance.

He had already prepared a follow up attack, anticipating that the countless swords might not be enough to defeat Aldrian. He lifted his sword above his head with one hand. His expression was focused, and upon seeing Aldrian finish using his defensive technique, he finally released his own attack.

Heaven Split

He executed a downward slash with overwhelming momentum. The slash energy ripped forward, splitting the earth open behind it into a clear line of shattered soil that advanced directly toward Aldrian. The slash also caused space itself to crack and begin to crumble along its path, creating a terrifying spectacle.

Aldrian sensed the incoming powerful sword strike and finally used his own technique. Without taking any stance, he slashed toward the incoming sword energy.

Slash of Vanguard

Powerful slash energy erupted from the sword and instantly clashed with the strike from the sword master as the distance between them had already closed.

Crang!

A sound like shattering glass resounded as space collapsed at the point of impact, creating a large spatial rift. The impact also destroyed the land, forming a deep crater, and its effects spread far and wide as countless sword slash traces suddenly appeared as far as fifty kilometers away. The surrounding desert had already lost all of its sand and was now replaced by barren soil.

The spectators had already retreated much farther away the moment Sect Master Huang unleashed his technique. They knew it would be dangerous to remain any closer.

Their hearts shuddered as they looked at the destruction. Did this still count as sparring? Why did it feel more like Sect Master Huang and Aldrian the Great were fighting for real?

Inside the sword domain, Sect Master Huang looked toward Aldrian's direction. Dust still covered his vision, preventing him from seeing Aldrian's figure due to the chaotic space and thick clouds of debris.

His breathing began to grow uneven as fatigue set in from the continuous use of energy. Moreover, he was still maintaining his sword domain at the same time, which consumed a massive amount of energy.

However, despite looking tired, his expression showed a smile. He could unleash anything he wanted without worrying about the consequences, as he had finally found the right opponent. He had finally found a worthy opponent for his sword, and also for himself. Aldrian could help him break through to a higher realm of sword comprehension.

After waiting for a few moments, he finally decided to use another of his sword techniques. He could sense that Aldrian was still alright within the chaotic atmosphere.

This technique was his ultimate one, and he wanted to try it on Aldrian.

He grasped his sword with both hands in front of his face. With his sword pointed toward the heavens, a brilliant light suddenly descended from the sky, piercing through the clouds. The spectators in the distance suddenly felt pressure from above, as if the heavens themselves were unleashing it.

Their hearts trembled at this sudden scene as they looked toward the sky, wondering what in the world was happening.

Then their eyes widened in shock as something enormous suddenly appeared from behind the clouds, splitting them apart.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 948 - 948: Sect Master Huang's Strongest Technique**

[ 1,644 words ]

In the distance, where a city was located near a desert region, all the people who were carrying out their normal activities suddenly looked in one direction. They were stunned by what they saw as a gigantic object appeared from behind the clouds in the distance.

"Is that... is that a sword?" one of the bystanders said as he looked at the split clouds that revealed a giant white sword tip. Even though only the tip of the sword was visible, they knew it was a sword.

The moment many of them realized this, they were truly astonished. They could even sense the powerful aura coming from the sword tip, and it made their hearts tremble. Such a phenomenon could only be someone's technique, or a sign of the appearance of some kind of treasure or secret place.

But the question was, if this was someone's technique, who could unleash something like this? And who were they fighting to be forced to use such a technique?

If it was a sign of a treasure, then what kind of treasure could give off such a grand sign?

Driven by curiosity, many cultivators began their journey toward the direction of the sword tip. They wanted to see for themselves what had happened.

At this moment, from various directions, many people set off toward the sword tip. As its aura alone swept the clouds away, the sword became clearer and clearer. Yet even when the clouds were driven away, they still could not see the hilt of the sword. What appeared before them was still only its blade part.

Unknown to them, if someone were to look from space, they would see that the sword's length could reach the atmosphere.

The sword was truly humongous.

In the battle area, the people who were watching Aldrian and Sect Master Huang spar had already escaped to a much farther distance, away from the giant sword.

Sweat rolled down their foreheads as they were truly terrified by the aura of the giant sword. From that aura alone, there was no doubt that this was their sect master's technique.

However, no one had ever seen Sect Master Huang unleash this technique before.

Was this the sect master's most powerful sword technique?

That question rose in many minds, and they were amazed. In their eyes, this technique was no less spectacular than what they had seen from Aldrian the Great. Just by

looking at the size of the sword and the power it contained, this technique might be able to kill many peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

If they could already feel such pressure from a distance, then what about the true focus of the technique? What state was Aldrian the Great in at this moment?

Aldrian, at this moment, had to withstand immense pressure, enough to force him to remain standing in his place. Space itself seemed to condense, becoming hardened and preventing him from moving freely. This change in space also made it extremely difficult for anyone to control space laws or use any space-attribute techniques or talismans.

In this situation, a normal cultivator would find themselves trapped in place, only able to wait for the giant sword to fall upon them.

But Aldrian looked up at the sky, where he could see a gigantic sword hanging above, ready to fall at any moment.

However, despite withstanding such immense pressure, he showed a smile and then looked toward the sect master in the distance.

Sect Master Huang also seemed to be enduring the effects of his own technique, and Aldrian could see that he had expended a large amount of energy to unleash it.

Yet despite the tired look on his face, Sect Master Huang appeared to be enjoying the battle, smiling toward Aldrian. It was as if what he had done was something normal in a sparring session, which was, of course, not normal at all.

Who would use their most powerful technique in a sparring session?

'To think that he can still stand steadily and even move his head without much difficulty. His expression does not show any discomfort at all.' Sect Master Huang thought.

After deciding that the time had come, Sect Master Huang did not hesitate any longer. With gritted teeth, he lowered the white lotus sword in his grasp, and the giant sword in the sky also began to fall.

Celestial Sword Fall from the Heavens.

Space collapsed as fierce winds spread across a wide region, and the pressure grew heavier and heavier as the giant sword approached the ground.

Aldrian then looked at the incoming sword with a slight smile. His body, which had become the center of the pressure, found it somewhat difficult to move. Thanks to the protection of his energy shield, the pressure was not overwhelmingly heavy.

Even so, he could still feel the suffocation and the heaviness in each of his movements.

If he had not protected himself with anything, his body would have already bent, barely able to hold itself against the pressure.

His expression suddenly turned sharp as the giant sword almost reached the surface of the world.

'Let's see if you can gain enlightenment from this,' he thought.

Suddenly, the aura around his body became sharp, and his bearing changed. It was as if his body itself had become a sword, sharp and resolute. He released his sword heart openly, allowing anyone to sense it.

Sect Master Huang, who could perceive this change, felt his heart shudder. At that moment, he felt that he comprehended something, yet before he could think further about what he had sensed from Aldrian, he saw Aldrian point his sword diagonally upward. And then—

Shhinngg!

A beam of golden light shot toward the sky, reaching the high atmosphere of the world. Aldrian then swung it toward the incoming giant sword, and the beam instantly collided with it.

The giant sword did not even last for two seconds before it split into two, from its lower edge all the way to the hilt in the atmosphere. The sword then shattered like giant glass, breaking into countless fragments. The impact caused a spatial storm high in the sky, sucking away a large area of the clouds.

Another effect followed as violent winds swept across the surrounding region. The people who witnessed this felt their bodies almost being thrown away, even though they were already at a great distance.

A massive dust storm also erupted, and a desert area spanning more than five thousand kilometers was stripped of sand, all of it swept away by the aftermath of the collision.

Sect Master Huang felt his soul shaken, and the flow of his energy became chaotic as Aldrian destroyed his technique.

Blood spilled from his lips, and he fell to one knee due to the pain tearing through his soul. His breathing became heavy, and his vision turned blurry. After unleashing Celestial Sword Fall from the Heavens, he could feel that his energy was almost entirely depleted.

A sense of drowsiness washed over him, and he wanted to close his eyes, but he forced them open.

He steadied himself as best he could, then took out a healing pill from his storage ring and swallowed it without hesitation. After that, he attempted to calm his chaotic energy flow and sat down in a meditative position.

He closed his eyes and focused on recuperating.

After a few minutes, he finally opened his eyes.

The thick dust around him had already cleared, and the destroyed landscape became visible. There was no desert left within his sight, only a barren land stretching into the distance.

He then turned to the side and saw Aldrian standing not far from him.

The moment he noticed that Aldrian seemed completely fine, without any sign of weakness or even a speck of dirt on his attire, he released a sigh.

'Truly a monster.'

Aldrian turned his head toward him, revealed a smile, and walked over. Sect Master Huang wanted to stand up, but Aldrian raised his hand to stop him.

"Please, Sect Master, stay where you are. You still need to recuperate. Excuse me, let me help you."

He then placed one hand on Sect Master Huang's shoulder and the other on his forehead.

Sect Master Huang felt a sudden warm sensation flow through his body and soul, especially his soul, which he knew had been heavily affected when his ultimate technique was broken by Aldrian. The warmth eased his pain and weakness, making them fade as if they had never existed.

After more than ten seconds, Aldrian finally stopped. Sect Master Huang released a sigh of relief, stood up, and cupped his hands.

"Thank you, Your Majesty, for helping me. This healing technique is truly marvelous."

A trace of apology appeared on his face as he continued.

"My apologies if I went too far during our sparring, Your Majesty. I was simply too excited. I finally had the chance to try techniques I had wanted to use for a very long time."

Aldrian waved his hand. "No problem, Sect Master. In fact, I truly enjoyed our spar. That was a good fight. Moreover, I want to help Sect Master make a breakthrough to a higher realm of sword comprehension. From what I could sense, Sect Master only needs one more enlightenment to reach the realm of sword heart."

"Sect Master's sword will is truly powerful, and it is already halfway to the sword heart. That is why I knew this fight would give Sect Master enlightenment. I also deliberately unleashed my sword heart so that Sect Master could gain insight later. You only need to reflect on our battle. I believe Sect Master must have felt something earlier, right?"

Sect Master Huang raised his eyebrows, then nodded and smiled enthusiastically.

"I see. I think I finally know how to break through to the sword heart," he said, then cupped his hands and even slightly bowed his body.

"Once again, thank you, Your Majesty, for your help and the enlightenment."

Aldrian smiled and then looked into the distance. "I think our spar has attracted quite a lot of people. It would be better for us to go back before those people crowd this place."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 949 - 949: Malicious Intent Amongst the Crowd**

[ 1,576 words ]

Aldrian and Sect Master Huang then flew back to the sect, while several elders stayed behind to take care of the aftermath of the spar. Because the effect of the spar was quite large, they could not simply leave without giving an explanation to the many people who had gathered. They did not want any misunderstandings to spread among the crowd.

After Aldrian, Sect Master Huang, and a few others arrived back at the sect, the sect master turned to Aldrian with a smile.

"Your Majesty, once again, thank you for entertaining this old man and for giving me a path to reach a higher realm. Please take some rest for now, Your Majesty. We have already prepared a special pavilion for you." He then looked at the Sword Maiden.

"My disciple here will bring Your Majesty to your pavilion. Or, if Your Majesty wishes to take a walk to any part of the sect, or perhaps take a stroll outside the sect, please feel free to do so. Meilan will guide you anywhere you wish to go."

"As for me, I am afraid that I must enter seclusion, as I have gained an insight from our spar just now. Please forgive me in advance, as I will be unable to accompany Your Majesty for some time."

Aldrian smiled and nodded. "Please make yourself comfortable, Sect Master. You do not need to feel burdened by my presence here. Miss Meilan will be more than enough as my guide."

The sect master smiled and glanced at his disciple for a moment before excusing himself to enter seclusion.

Meilan then guided Aldrian to his accommodation, which was located in one of the most beautiful areas of the sect. As they walked toward his pavilion, Aldrian began to chat with her, and Meilan gladly answered his questions.

As they continued to converse, Aldrian suddenly brought out a golden token from his storage ring, engraved with a Celestial Lotus Sect's symbol. This was the same token that Meilan had given to Aldrian before, when she challenged him to a spar in the past.

"Miss Meilan, you lent me this token as compensation for challenging me to a spar back then. At that time, I thought I might need it, so I accepted it. However, I do not think I will need this token in the future, so I would like to return it to you." He brought the token closer to Meilan.

Meilan looked at the token for a moment, and she could not help but slightly flush as she remembered how she had challenged Aldrian to a duel.

She suddenly felt foolish for making that challenge and felt truly embarrassed. Still, she did not regret it, as she had been able to experience a battle with a powerful figure like Aldrian.

She pushed aside her embarrassment and took a deep breath before taking the token. Aldrian simply smiled as they continued to walk.

After a few moments, she finally gathered her courage and opened her lips.

"Your Majesty, if you do not mind, while you stay at the sect, would you please spar with me again? I apologize beforehand, as I do not think I have anything worthy enough to give you as compensation for taking up your time."

Aldrian glanced at Meilan and saw that she was holding back her embarrassment. He could not help but find it amusing.

Still, he answered her.

"Of course, Miss Meilan. Just come to me, and I will become your sparring partner. In fact, I do not mind even if you wish to spar with me after we arrive at my pavilion. Do not think about compensation, but if you still feel bad, then think of it as a reward for you joining the war in the Northern Star Cluster."

Hearing that, Meilan released a sigh of relief and smiled.

A moment later, a woman approached them. Aldrian knew that she was Meilan's friend, Rei, who had always been with her throughout Meilan's journeys.

They accompanied him until he reached his pavilion, which was located on the slope of one of the mountains, with beautiful scenery and landscape.

The pavilion was in a secluded place and had a high concentration of energy, making it truly good place for cultivation. From this location, Aldrian could see a large part of the sect and its seven peaks.

Aldrian liked the scenery and the landscape here, but before he could enjoy it further, Meilan stepped forward toward him.

"Your Majesty, may we spar at this time?"

Rei, who heard her best friend say that, widened her eyes in shock. To her, Meilan truly dared to ask something like that of Aldrian.

In the past, when she learned about the matter between Meilan and Aldrian, she had not thought much of it, as they truly did not know Aldrian's identity at that time.

But now it was different. He was someone far beyond their reach, and he had just arrived at this place, even sparring with their sect master. She thought it was inappropriate and wanted to berate Meilan. However, she then noticed that Aldrian was actually smiling.

"Just like I said, I will not refuse. Of course, you may," he replied. Then, in a short time, he created a secret realm, which truly astonished Rei. This was the first time she had seen someone create a secret realm, and to do it so quickly at that.

They then entered the secret realm, where he and Meilan could spar freely, just like in the past.

Meilan looked at Aldrian and saw that he was already taking out a different sword from the one he had used to face her master. The sword was of low divine grade, the same as her own sword.

Her fighting spirit burned fiercely as she unsheathed her sword and prepared to fight. After witnessing the battle between her master and Aldrian, she knew that she still had a long way to go before she could reach even a fraction of her master's level.

However, watching their spar had given her a new push and renewed determination to work harder. She wanted to become stronger, to one day stand at the same level as her master or even Aldrian.

Rei watched Aldrian and Meilan from the side, curious to see their spar.

"Come," Aldrian said.

Meilan did not hesitate to attack.

-----

While Aldrian and Meilan were inside the secret realm and sparring, news of what had happened in the desert region began to spread. Some people near the Celestial Lotus Sect already knew about Aldrian the Great visiting the sect, but they did not know that Sect Master Huang and Aldrian had actually sparred.

Many people who visited the desert region were stunned when they saw that a large part of the region had completely changed, with the sands having disappeared.

The area had transformed into a land filled with traces of powerful sword will, which could greatly benefit sword cultivators but was also dangerous. If they were not careful, they could be injured by the lingering remnants of that sword will.

Because of this, even more people finally learned that Aldrian the Great was in their world and was staying at the Celestial Lotus Sect. As a result, many people wanted to visit the sect and meet him, at least to pay their respects.

Due to this, the area outside the sect grounds became boisterous, with many people wanting to enter the sect.

Even if they could not enter, they stayed not far from the front gate, hoping that they might catch a glimpse of Aldrian. They wanted to see for themselves the legend who had been a topic of discussion for so long in the Central Star Cluster.

In the midst of the crowd that wanted to see Aldrian, there were two figures who seemed to belong to the same group. One of them was a thin man, while the other was a burly man. They looked toward the sect's entrance from a distance, where they could see many people still trying their luck to enter the sect, only to be blocked by the guards.

"It seems it will be difficult to even enter the sect. I doubt that we even have a chance to get inside at this moment," the skinny man sent to the burly man through voice transmission.

"It cannot be helped. It looks like we need to use our assets within the sect to do the work. Contact them after this," the burly man replied, which caused the skinny man to frown.

"But would that increase Aldrian the Great's chance of discovering us? What if our asset gets caught instead? That monster's abilities are too mysterious. I would not even doubt that he somehow already knows about us coming and our intent to kill him," the skinny man replied.

The burly man did not answer, as he also did not know the correct answer. The information they had heard about Aldrian was terrifying.

He did not know the limits of Aldrian's power or capabilities, which left him and his colleagues confused about how to plan Aldrian's assassination.

However, they still had to try, as that monster had finally visited this world. Because of that, many from their group had started their journey toward the Celestial Lotus Sect with a single purpose: to assassinate their greatest threat, even if it meant sacrificing their own lives.

Since Aldrian's rise, they could only hide and refrain from doing anything drastic. Now, they finally had a chance.

"Even if we have to lose our pawn in the Celestial Lotus Sect, it does not matter, as long as Aldrian the Great is dead," the burly man said solemnly.

"For our god."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 950 - 950: Did He Not Hear What She Just Said?**

[ 1,609 words ]

In the afternoon, Aldrian was still inside the secret realm. He was in fresh and good condition, standing with his sword sheathed. In front of him, two women lay on the ground with uneven breathing.

Who were they, if not Meilan the Sword Maiden and her friend Rei?

Their ample breasts moved up and down with each breath as they tried to inhale as much oxygen as possible. Sweat had rolled across their bodies, soaking their already tight robes and making their curves even more visible.

Their swords lay beside them, and they looked too tired to even sheath them. They were truly vulnerable right now.

Rei spoke to Meilan. "Agh, when I thought we got him, he always managed to evade by a small margin." She then realized what she had just said and looked at Aldrian with a rigid smile.

"My apologies, Your Majesty." She lowered her head again.

As time passed while she watched Meilan spar with Aldrian, she suddenly felt the urge to receive a lesson from him as well. When else could she receive a personal lesson from Aldrian the Great?

That was why she gathered her courage and asked him to train her as well, which he did not mind. Then began hours of sparring, with the goal of touching even a small part of Aldrian's robe.

From one versus one to one versus two, they continued training until Meilan and Rei were completely out of energy.

Aldrian smiled as he looked at their exhausted condition. He stored his sword in his storage ring and walked behind Meilan and Rei before sitting down. Then he looked at Rei.

"That was good development. At least your teamwork with Miss Meilan could approach my robe and almost cut it," he said.

Meilan and Rei did not say anything. They knew that Aldrian only said that to encourage them. In fact, they knew they were still far from even touching his robe. He had been playing with them in order to give them a lesson.

Because of this training, they could feel that their battle senses were becoming sharper and quicker. There were also many things they understood as a result of sparring with Aldrian. He could take on many kinds of cultivators, which allowed them to learn how to face various types of opponents.

This training was truly useful for their future, as they might face many different cultivators.

As Meilan and Rei were still catching their breath, Aldrian touched their shoulders and injected his energy to make them more comfortable. The moment they felt Aldrian's energy, they were stunned by the warmth it carried and how it erased their fatigue and weakness. They felt so comfortable that they wanted to fall asleep at any moment.

They did not understand why Aldrian's energy felt different, but they did not care, as they felt completely relaxed.

Unfortunately, that feeling did not last long. Aldrian retracted his energy after he finished helping them heal and refresh their bodies. Although they could still feel some weakness due to their lack of energy, they were in much better condition than before.

They finally managed to sit up before sheathing their swords and looking at Aldrian.

"Thank you, Your Majesty, for the training."

"Thank you, Your Majesty, for the lesson."

Both of them spoke at the same time.

Aldrian smiled and nodded. "Good. Please take a rest after this. You did well to hold on until this point."

The two women could only smile as they heard his praise. Aldrian then helped them up by holding their hands, and they finally left the secret realm.

The moment they stepped out of the secret realm, the sky had already turned orange on the horizon, with the sun touching it.

Meilan and Rei sighed when they realized they had spent hours inside the secret realm. With all the knowledge they gained from Aldrian, they had not noticed how quickly time had passed.

"Ah, yes. While you are still here, I want to ask something regarding Arantes," Aldrian said, causing the two women to look at him.

"Please ask anything, Your Majesty," Meilan replied.

Aldrian nodded. "What is the most dangerous place in this world? I mean something like a forbidden zone, where there is no one or no record of anyone who could come back once they enter that area."

Hearing the question, the two ladies raised their eyebrows in wonder, but Meilan still answered him.

"Well, if we are talking about the most dangerous place, or the most dangerous forbidden zone in Arantes, then it is undoubtedly the Bottomless Abyss in the southern part of the continent. But overall, there are seven forbidden zones across Arantes, spread across different parts of the world, where even peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators could be killed if they entered recklessly."

She then narrowed her eyes. "Why did Your Majesty ask about this place?"

Aldrian smiled. "Well, if I told you that I want to visit the most dangerous place in this world, would you guide me there?"

Hearing that, Meilan and Rei widened their eyes in shock.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, but are you serious? A place like the Bottomless Abyss is called the most dangerous forbidden zone for an obvious reason. Even before reaching the abyss itself, the surrounding region is already dangerous, filled with strange fog that can confuse anyone who enters it and can even could make people disappear," Meilan said.

"The only ones who were able to reach the Bottomless Abyss and see the abyss itself were pseudo-immortal stage cultivators in the past. But that is as far as our knowledge goes, as there is no record of anyone who could enter the abyss and come back."

"Throughout the long history of Arantes, not a single person has been able to explain the abyss or the strange phenomena surrounding that area. That is why it is called the most dangerous forbidden zone, and only a small number of people dare to visit it."

Hearing Meilan's explanation, Aldrian's smile instead grew brighter, and he clapped his hands.

"Perfect. I want to visit this place. Could you lead the way there? You only need to bring me to the outer area, and I can continue by myself," he said, leaving Meilan and Rei speechless.

Perfect? Did he not hear what she just said?

Rei did not know whether this was simply Aldrian's character, but did he really like challenging dangerous places? This was the first time she had heard someone sound so enthusiastic after hearing about a forbidden zone.

If not for his reputation and strength, she would have thought that he was already tired of living and had decided to seek death in a forbidden zone.

Meilan also could not understand what was going on inside Aldrian's mind. Although she knew how special Aldrian was, she was still worried about him.

"Your Majesty, I do not know if this is a wise decision to visit that place. Please do not misunderstand. I am not underestimating you, but there are still many mysteries surrounding the Bottomless Abyss. I am worried that something might happen to you if you insist on going there," she said worriedly.

Aldrian was still smiling. "I understand your concern, but I have my own reasons for visiting this place. Even if you do not want to guide me there, I will still try to visit it."

Hearing that, Meilan sighed and nodded. "Alright. If Your Majesty truly wishes to visit that place, I will guide you there. So when does Your Majesty plan to depart?"

"Tomorrow sounds good. How about it?"

"Alright, tomorrow then," Meilan said.

"Thank you, I really appreciate it," Aldrian replied, which made Meilan smile.

"No problem, Your Majesty. This is also one of my duties, to become your guide as long as you stay in this world."

After talking for a moment, Meilan and Rei excused themselves and left the pavilion. Aldrian then walked toward one of the small pavilions at the edge of the cliff, where he could see the vastness of the sect and the seven peaks.

As darkness began to blanket the sky, lights from distant buildings added to the beauty of the landscape. He sat down, took out a tea set, and brewed the tea himself as he enjoyed the scenery.

While Aldrian was enjoying his tea, Meilan and Rei continued walking toward their own pavilion when they encountered a group of people.

The moment they saw this group, their expressions turned into frowns.

The group was led by a handsome young man with long black hair tied into a ponytail. Behind him were five men and three women.

The young man showed his best smile at Meilan when he saw her.

"Ah, Junior Sister Meilan, were you just visiting His Majesty, Aldrian the Great?" the young man asked.

Meilan, already wearing her veil and maintaining a calm expression, answered him flatly, showing no interest.

"I was. So what is Senior Brother Luyan doing here? Did you want to visit His Majesty? If so, then I think it is not a good time. It is already getting dark, and His Majesty needs some private time. It would be better if you try to visit tomorrow."

The others in the young man's group showed displeased expressions, but the young man, who was named Luyan, only raised his eyebrows and sighed.

"I see. It cannot be helped then. I only wished to meet His Majesty personally and pay my respects to him."

Meilan seemed to lose interest in continuing the conversation, so she simply walked forward, passing the group.

However, before she could fully pass, her wrist was suddenly grasped by Luyan, causing Meilan's eyes to turn cold as her sharp gaze locked onto his.

Sensing the intensity of her gaze, Luyan immediately released his grip and raised both hands. Before he could say anything, Rei beside Meilan spoke fiercely.

"Senior Brother, you had better watch how you act. Do not touch Meilan with your hands."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.